

MEMOIRS

OF THE

Count *de FORBIN*,

COMMODORE

In the NAVY of FRANCE:

AND

Knight of the Order of St. *Lewis*.

CONTAINING

HIS NARRATIVE of the Voyages he made to the *East-Indies*, &c. and of the great Honours paid to him at the Court of *Siam*, where he was preferr'd to be the King's High-Admiral, Generalissimo of his Troops, and Governor of the Tower of *Bancock*.

HIS particular ACCOUNT of the Battle at LA HOGUE, and other Fights that he was engag'd in, during Forty-four Years that he spent in the *Sea-Service*.

And his SECRET HISTORY

Of the Chevalier *de St. GEORGE*'s Expedition in 1708, from *Dunkirk* to *Scotland*; in which he had the special Charge of the Chevalier's Person.

Translated from the FRENCH.

The Second Edition.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. PEMBERTON, at the Buck against St. Dunstan's Church in Fleet-street.

M.DCC.XXXIV.

MEMOIRS

OF THE

Count de FORBIN

COMMODORE

In the NAVY of FRANCE:

AND

Knight of the Order of St. Lewis

CONTAINING

His NARRATIVE of the Voyage he made to the East-Indies, &c. and of the great Honours paid to him at the Court of Spain, where he was preferred to be the King's High Admiral, Grand Master of his Troops, and Governor of the Tower of Barcelona.

His personal Account of the Battle of Al-Houss, and other things that he was engaged in, during Forty-four Years that he spent in the Sea Service.

And his Secret History

Of the Chevalier de St. Georges's Expedition in 1708, from Dunkirk to Scotland, in which he had the special Charge of the Chevalier's Person.

Translated from the French.

The second Edition.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

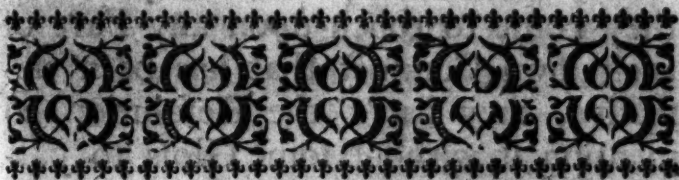
L O N D O N :

Printed for J. BARNARD, at the Swan, against St. Dunstons Church in Fleet Street.

MDCCLXXIV.



wor
shan
For
ract
fire
by
upo
that
leas
Circ
to d
conf
T
who
and



MEMOIRS OF THE Count DE FORBIN, &c.



THE Motive that influences most Writers to publish their Memoirs being a View only to their own Praise, no wonder that Truth has seldom much share in their Compositions. Their Fondness to set off their own Characters to Advantage, and their Desire to please and captivate the Reader by surprizing Narrations, put them upon frequent recourse to Adventures that are meerly fictitious, or such at least as are stuff'd with so many false Circumstances, that 'tis scarce possible to distinguish the Truth, where 'tis so confounded with its contrary.

THERE'S another sort of Writers who don't run quite into this Extreme, and whose Veracity may be depended

1675.

Why many Memoirs carry so little of Truth

Why others are so trifling.

1675.



on in all other respects; but yet when they come to touch upon any Part of their own Conduct that has been defective, they han't the Resolution to mention it without some Gloss to palliate it. From hence it happens, that both the one and the other deviate almost alike from what ought to be the Aim of a judicious Writer, and that instead of publishing Works of Use to Mankind, they abuse the Credulity of the Reader, who, very often, for want of being better instructed from other Hands, swallows Fiction for Truth, or else forms wrong Ideas in his Brain concerning many Incidents which would have been worth his Knowledge, if they had been truly convey'd to him. Thus, when a Man ought rather to have employ'd the Time in perusing a Work of solid Instruction, he finds he has no more Advantage to boast of, than if he had been reading a trifling Romance.

Our Author's Impartiality.

As there is no Crime which a Man of Honour would scorn more than to impose thus upon the Publick, it was my chief Resolution to write nothing in these Memoirs but what was strictly true, not only in my Account of Matters, where I was an Actor and an Eye-witness; but in the Discovery of my own Faults, which, the Reader will

1675.



will have several Opportunities of observing, I have expos'd, without the least Partiality in my own Favour. I hope he will not think the worse of me for being so just, and that while he reaps Instruction from any Good or Harm that I have done, he will, for the Sake of my Sincerity, forgive any Error in the Stile of a Warriour not used to the Pen, and whose only Aim is to be understood, without being incumber'd with the Ornaments of Diction.

I was born *August* the 6th, *Anno* 1656. His Birth and Great Name.
at *Gardanne*, a Village of *Provence*. I shall not detain you with an Account of my Family; the Name of FORBIN being very well known, because of the many Gentlemen of that Name who have distinguish'd themselves, not only in the Church, but by the Sword, and at the Bar.

If the Actions of a Child are, as they say, an Indication of what he will be at Years of Maturity, 'tis certain that they who were then about me, must imagine I was destin'd to give and take abundance of Blows; for my natural Temper being lively, turbulent and impetuous, I play'd a Thousand unlucky Pranks, was apt to domineer over my Play-fellows, and if they made ever so little Resistance, we were sure to lug one another by the
B 2 Hair,

His unlucky Pranks when a Child.

1675.

Hair, and go to Fighting. When I cou'd not gain my Point by Boxing and Kicking, I fell to throwing of Stones, and scarce a Day passed over my Head, but the Relations of the Striplings I had beat, made heavy Complaints against me, though all Chastisement was thrown away upon me, for Severity only render'd me the more untractable.

His Behaviour
when his
Father con-
fin'd him.

ONE Day that my Father shut me up in a Chamber for I know not what Fault, after I had quite tired my self with bawling and thundering to no Purpose at the Door, I was in such a Rage that I pluck'd off a good deal of my Hair, and knock'd my Head against the Wall to such a Degree, that when they came and open'd the Door, they found me all over bloody, my Head almost bald, and full of Bumps.

His Father's
Death.

IN those early Days, before I scarce knew my Father, I lost him; so that being the younger Brother of a numerous Family, I had no Chance left, when I came to Years of Discretion, but to find out the Means of supporting the Honour of my Birth with the Advantages which Fortune then deny'd me.

Encounters
with a Mad
Dog.

I HAD no Hopes to attain to this Point, but from that Fund of Courage and

1675.

and Intrepidity which stood me in great stead afterwards upon several Occasions, and which at Ten Years of Age sav'd me from a kind of Death that wou'd have been equally Cruel and Tragical: For a Mad Dog, which was the Terror of the whole Neighbourhood, came up to me one Day foaming at the Mouth, but without flinching I stood my Ground, and holding out my Hat to him, which I let go that very Moment, I took him by one of the Hind-Legs, and with a Knife instantly ripp'd up his Guts, in presence of a great Number of People that were come to my Rescue.

I was not a little elevated with the fine Things that were said of me after so bold an Adventure; and by extolling my Courage beyond the Compass of my Age, I found my Heart glow with an Ardour which I had never yet experienced. At the first Blaze of it, I took the Freedom to tell my Mother, my Fondness for Arms, and that as I was desirous to humour my Inclination, I hop'd she wou'd not oppose it; adding, that all I wanted of her was a Child's Portion, which would enable me to go to the Army. The Proposal was so ill received, that she immediately gave me a flat Denial, and

Robs his
Mother and
runs away.

1675.

when I offer'd to insist on it, I met with a proper Chastisement. This Proceeding stung me so to the Quick, that I resolv'd to leave the House, and go and complain to my Brother, who liv'd four Leagues from *Gardanne*, at a Place call'd *St. Marcel*. He shew'd just as much Regard to my Complaints as they deserved, that is to say, none at all; upon which finding that he had Thoughts of sending me back again, I resolv'd to prevent him. To this end I stole some Pieces of Plate, and run away to *Marseilles*, with a Design there to list myself a Soldier, and to turn my Plunder into Money; but, as ill Luck would have it, one *Romieu* a Hugonot Goldsmith, to whom I apply'd to convert my Prize into Cash, finding the Arms of the *Forbin* Family upon it, advertis'd it, which occasion'd my being taken up and carried back to my Mother, who sent me to board with a neighbouring Priest.

Escapes to
Marseilles.

My Head being so full of warlike Notions, 'tis natural to suppose that I did not long conform to that Constraint. One Day, as the Priest was going to correct me for some trivial Fault, I threw my Inkhorn at his Head; upon this he made up to me with such an angry Countenance, that dreading what might be the Consequences

1675.

quences of his Resentment, I threw myself headlong from a Terrass above ten Foot high, being resolved to venture the breaking of a Leg or an Arm rather than undergo the Mortification of submitting to a Punishment which I did not think I deserved: But a Heap of Dung that lay under the Terrass sav'd me from the Dangers of so bold a Leap; and improving the fair Opportunity, I took to my Heels and ran with all the Speed I cou'd make to *Marseilles*, to my Uncle FORBIN GARDANE, who having the Command of a Galley, receiv'd me with pleasure, and having put me in the Habit of a Cadet, carry'd me aboard his Vessel, where I began to be called the CHEVALIER DE FORBIN.

WHEN a Man enters the Service so young as I did, and with so much Fire in his Blood, he is very apt to be surprized into a false and dangerous Delicacy on the Point of Honour. This Rock, so fatal to all young Men, I cou'd not avoid, for in the very first Campaign I made, while the Gallies lay at *Ciutat*, I drew my Sword for a very Trifle, upon one COULON a Cadet. The Rencounter was so much to my Advantage, that I disarm'd my Man; and this first Victory made me so vain, that I did not doubt but my Com-

His Rencounter with a Cadet.

1675. rades wou'd be very circumspect and cautious for the future of provoking me.

His Reward
for it.

THIS Trial of my Manhood was highly pleasing to my Uncle; and the Marshal *de Vivonne* who commanded, making Allowance for the Vivacity of a young Man full of Mettle, who is apt to be outrageous when he thinks himself affronted, was so far from calling me to an Account for it, that he gave me the Flag as a Reward for my Courage. I serv'd on board the Gallies several Campaigns, which I shall pass over in Silence, for fear lest I should tire my Reader, by detaining him too long on the first Stage of my Life.

His second
Duel.

IN the Year 1675, the Marshal *de Vivonne* having Orders to command the Naval Army that was to go to the Relief of *Messina*, carry'd the Company of Guards to *Toulon*, where they stay'd till all things were ready for their Departure. During this Interval, I had a Quarrel with one of my Comrades call'd *VILLECROSE*. We drew our Swords, and in this second Duel I had all the Advantage again, without any bad Consequence. Some Days after, playing at Mall, I had a Skirmish too with *BIDO*, another of the Marine Guards. He was a Man every

every
high
put
me u
treat
this
see m
a ter
Mal
Feet
my
out
patc
that
of t
hen
the
Off
Em
gre
hav
Pu
all
dif
wh
an
gr
up
w
w
R

every Inch of him, and, after some high Words had pass'd betwixt us, he put on a disdainful Look, and chuck'd me under the Chin, as if he meant to treat me like a Boy. Being nettled at this Affront (for I could not bear to see my Youth despised) I gave him such a terrible Blow on the Head with the Mallet, that he drop'd down at my Feet, and, had it not been for one of my Comrades that wrested the Mallet out of my Hand, I should have dispatch'd him at one Blow.

1675.

Knocks a Man down with a Mallet.

'Tis worth remarking by the Way, that both these Quarrels were the Effect of the idle Life we led at *Toulon*. From hence it appears, that they who have the Care and Management of young Officers, cannot find them too much Employment; for tho' the King in his great Wisdom and Goodness seems to have made sufficient Provision for this Purpose, by appointing Academies in all Places, yet, notwithstanding all the different Exercises we were put to, they who only study'd out of Compulsion, and without any Taste, which was the greatest Number, had many idle Hours upon their Hands, as will be seen by what I am going to relate.

The ill Effects of Idleness, or having Nothing to do.

WHEN our Academical Exercises were ended, Gaming was the common Recreation, which gave Birth to a

Gaming & Quarrels.

1675.

thousand Quarrels every Day, among the Guards. *St. Pol*, one of my Comrades, play'd at Piquet one Day with the Chevalier *de Gourdon*, and won 20 Crowns of him; but the Difficulty was how to get the Money from him, for the Chevalier had not a Sous in his Pocket, and *St. Pol* insisting strenuously on Satisfaction, they had like to have drawn upon one another. But to prevent it, I put my Hand in my Pocket, and paid the 20 Crowns for the Chevalier, who promised to let me have them again forthwith. But he was not as good as his Word; and whether it was for Want of Money or Honesty, I know not, but he saw me again and again, without taking the least Notice of it. My Patience being tired at his Silence, which I took as a Sort of Affront, I ask'd him more than once for my Money, but was always put off with sorry Excuses, and fruitless Promises. At length, after a great many Delays, and being press'd by Necessity, (for, Thanks to the Fate of younger Brothers, I was often out of Cash) I resolved to bring the Affair to a speedy Issue. For this End I put on a Sword by my Side which had a Hilt of Iron, and, thus accouter'd, went to the Chevalier and asked him, if he had any Thoughts of paying me. He still endeavour'd

He lends
Money to a
broken
Gamester.

His Stratagem to get
it again.

to

to put me off with the usual Answer, upon which I laid hold on his Silver-hilted Sword, and giving him mine in Exchange for it, I told him, *I would restore him his Sword, when he paid me the Money.*

1675.

BUT I am obliged to declare the whole Truth of the Matter. The Chevalier *de Gourdon* was very young when this Adventure happen'd, nevertheless it made such a Noise, that his Uncle the Count *de Beuil* the Captain of the Galley, complained of it to the Governor of *Gardanne* who reprimanded me severely, and obliged me to return the Sword; but, strange that Officers of their Understanding should be guilty of such an Error! they never took Care for the Payment of the 20 Crowns, and much less for reconciling us, which was attended with very fatal Consequences, as we shall see in its Place.

His Rebuke
for it.

EVERY Thing being ready for the Departure of the Fleet, we sailed for *Messina*, which, the *Spaniards* having besieged by Sea and Land, was reduced to the utmost Extremity, insomuch, that the People, after having spent the little Stock of Corn they had left, were glad to eat Shoe-Leather, or other Things still more shocking to Nature. In short, being able to hold out no longer, they were just going to sur-

Siege and
Famine at
Messina.

1675. render when we appeared in Sight, with a great Number of Transports laden with Corn, under the Convoy of nine Men of War. At our Arrival, the Enemy came out of the *Fare* and attack'd us; whereupon a bloody Battle ensued, during which, the Chevalier *de Valbielle* who commanded Six of the King's Ships, and who had been blocked up in the Harbour, by the Enemy, ever since the Beginning of the Siege, sailed out and join'd us.

Engagement at the Relieving of it.

The joyfal Reception of M. *de Vivonne* in the Town.

As soon as the *Spaniards* perceiv'd it, they fled, and if M. *de Vivonne* had pursued them, they had been infallibly destroyed, but the Marshal considering how much the Town wanted Relief, suffered them to make the best of their Way, after having taken only one of their Men of War. He was received by the Town as it were in Triumph, amid the Acclamations of all the numerous Inhabitants, who, with a loud Voice proclaim'd him their Deliverer, and in Acknowledgment of so great a Favour, paid him the Title and Honours of a Viceroy, all the Time he staid there. *Messina* being thus freed from its Blockade by Sea, the next Thing was to raise that by Land: For this End the Marshal obliged the Guards of the Standard to buy Horses, that they might be able to keep up with him,

him,
Flow
vigor
Enem
the T
Days
nant
Ships
of *Ad*
canno
which
we ft
Fort
most
thus
the C
band
N
of th
War
Bail
Mur
adm
sent
had
Sea
kne
the
you
My
the
was
gac

him, after which, having chosen the Flower of the Citizens, he caused a vigorous Salley to be made, drove the Enemy from all their Posts, and set the Town entirely free. Not many Days after this, M. *Duquene* Lieutenant General was detach'd with some Ships and Galleys to attack the Town of *Aofia*: The first Thing he did was cannonading it for several Days, after which, the Troops being put on Shore, we storm'd and took the Place. The Forts surrender'd three Days after, almost without making any Defence; and thus ended the Campaign, upon which, the Guards of the Standard were disbanded.

1675.
A Sally made, and the Siege raised.

Aofia attack'd and taken.

NOT being able to bear the Thoughts of that idle Life I was like to lead for Want of Employment, I wrote to the Bailiff *de Forbin*, who commanded the Musqueteers, that he would please to admit me into his Company; he consented with all his Heart; but, as I had never served any where, except at Sea, I was a miserable Rider, and knew nothing at all of a Horse; so that the Company must needs think I was a young Man that wanted Discipline. My Horse had the Misfortune to have the Strangles, and one Day when he was ty'd up with the rest of the Brigade, *Prully*, one of the Musqueteers, a

Our Author's Admission into a Company of the Musqueteers.

noted

1675.

His Skirmish with one of them for turning his Horse loose.

noted Braggadocio, unty'd him, and out of Spite, or some other Motive, let him run loose about the Stables. When I return'd, and found my Horse out of his Rank, I could not help letting fall some bitter Words against the Man who had play'd me such a scurvy Prank. Whether *Prully* despised my Youth, or whether he did it to try my Mettle, he laid his Hand upon my Hat. At that very Instant, not considering that it was a Crime to fight where I was, I drew my Sword, and we made several Passes at one another, but were soon parted by several of the other Musqueteers, one of whom acquainting *Prully* that the Bailiff was my Kinsman, he thought it his best Way to go and ask his Pardon for what had passed.

1676.

His first Acquaintance with his Friend the Count de Luc.

The Sieges of Conde, Beauchain, and Aire.

THE Year following, the Troops had Orders to go to *Flanders*; the King, who commanded them in Person, being resolved to open the Campaign with the Siege of *Conde*. It was during this Siege, that I first became acquainted with the Count de *Luc*; we both served in the same Company, and the Friendship we then contracted was so solid and intire, that it has never been interrupted since, and in all Probability, will last to the Grave. In the mean time the Siege was carried on with such Vigour, that, after eight Days open Trenches,

Tre
Sto
the
was
to
fam
Air
whi
whi
foll
lay
up
You
no
T
for
Ser
and
I se
a T
Tru
fma
pain
diti
if t
of
out
Poc
sho
min
him
forn
for

1676.

Trenches, the King gave Orders for a Storm, in which the Musqueteers were the first that attack'd, and the Place was taken. From *Conde* we march'd to *Bouchain*, which was carried in the same Manner, and with the Siege of *Aire* the Campaign concluded, after which the King returned to *Paris*, whither the Musqueteers had Orders to follow him. The rest of this Year we lay very quiet, only I was often clapt up in Prison for the Sallies of my Youth, for which, the Bailiff gave me no Quarter.

The frequent Confinement of our Author for his Pranks.

1677.

THE next Year chang'd my Destiny, for I was again entered into the Sea-Service, made Ensign on board a Ship, and ordered to the Station at *Brest*. Before I set out, I was very desirous to make a Tour to *Provence*, and, to say the Truth, I had great Need of it, my small Equipage being quite out of Repair. I should not have been in a Condition to have undertaken the Journey, if the Abbot *de Luc* (now the Bishop of *Aix*) had not generously relieved me out of Trouble, and put Money in my Pocket. Just as I was setting out, who should I see, but a poor Kinsman of mine, who, having no Money to carry him home, came to let me know his sorrowful Case: I had such a Concern for his Misfortune, that I said to him,
Cousin,

1675.

His Skirmish with one of them for turning his Horse loose.

noted Braggadocio, unty'd him, and out of Spite, or some other Motive, let him run loose about the Stables. When I return'd, and found my Horse out of his Rank, I could not help letting fall some bitter Words against the Man who had play'd me such a scurvy Prank. Whether *Prully* despised my Youth, or whether he did it to try my Mettle, he laid his Hand upon my Hat. At that very Instant, not considering that it was a Crime to fight where I was, I drew my Sword, and we made several Passes at one another, but were soon parted by several of the other Musqueteers, one of whom acquainting *Prully* that the Bailiff was my Kinsman, he thought it his best Way to go and ask his Pardon for what had passed.

1676.

His first Acquaintance with his Friend the Count de Luc.

The Sieges of Conde, Beauchain, and Aire.

THE Year following, the Troops had Orders to go to *Flanders*; the King, who commanded them in Person, being resolved to open the Campaign with the Siege of *Conde*. It was during this Siege, that I first became acquainted with the Count *de Luc*; we both served in the same Company, and the Friendship we then contracted was so solid and intire, that it has never been interrupted since, and in all Probability, will last to the Grave. In the mean time the Siege was carried on with such Vigour, that, after eight Days open Trenches,

Tre
Sto
the
was
to
fam
Air
whi
whi
foll
lay
up
You
no
T
for
Ser
and
I se
a T
Tru
fma
pain
diti
if th
of
out
Poc
shou
min
him
forn
for

1676.

Trenches, the King gave Orders for a Storm, in which the Musqueteers were the first that attack'd, and the Place was taken. From *Conde* we march'd to *Bouchain*, which was carried in the same Manner, and with the Siege of *Aire* the Campaign concluded, after which the King returned to *Paris*, whither the Musqueteers had Orders to follow him. The rest of this Year we lay very quiet, only I was often clapt up in Prison for the Sallies of my Youth, for which, the Bailiff gave me no Quarter.

The frequent Confinement of our Author for his Pranks.

1677.

THE next Year chang'd my Destiny, for I was again entered into the Sea-Service, made Ensign on board a Ship, and ordered to the Station at *Brest*. Before I set out, I was very desirous to make a Tour to *Provence*, and, to say the Truth, I had great Need of it, my small Equipage being quite out of Repair. I should not have been in a Condition to have undertaken the Journey, if the Abbot *de Luc* (now the Bishop of *Aix*) had not generously relieved me out of Trouble, and put Money in my Pocket. Just as I was setting out, who should I see, but a poor Kinsman of mine, who, having no Money to carry him home, came to let me know his sorrowful Case: I had such a Concern for his Misfortune, that I said to him, Cousin,

1677.

His Journey to *Provence* on Foot, for Want of Money.

Rides Post from *Aix* to *Marseilles* for Fear of Shame.

His Rencontre with the Chevalier *de Gourdon*.

Cousin, there's all the Money I have, I am sorry there is not enough to carry us both in the Post-Chaise; but what then? Rather than abandon you, I will foot it all the Way with you, in which Case, the Sum I have will be sufficient for us both. Upon this, we took a Couple of Shirts in our Pockets, and with each a long Stick in his Hand, which look'd like the Staff of a Pilgrim, we set out for *Provence*. We continued together till we came to *Aix*, where I took Post for *Marseilles*, because I should have been quite ashamed to have entered the Town on Foot. My old Comrades, after embracing me, naturally ask'd, How I came from *Paris*? to which I answered (without the least Hesitation) that I rode *Post*.

AFTER having recruited a little, I was resolved, before I went to *Brest*, to go to *Toulon*, to take Leave of one of my Brothers, and an Uncle. The very next Day after my Arrival, who should I meet there, but the Chevalier *de Gourdon*, who was now an Ensign of the Marine, and, as Time had ripened his Courage, he remember'd how I had affronted him by taking his Sword from him, and was resolved to have Satisfaction. We fought before the Bishop's Palace: I gave him one Thrust in the Belly, and another in the Neck, where,

where
Being
Wou
retrea
Insta
in th
the C
I wa
sente
me;
disar
have
of H
these
upon
noth
mak
that
A
was
adm
lier,
in hi
had
Pass
now
thin
doul
havi
rous
own
T
Noi

where, by a Parry, my Sword rested. Being thereby disarmed, I received a Wound in my Side, which made me retreat a few Paces, and, just at that Instant, my Sword, which was thrust in the Chevalier's Neck, dropping to the Ground, he took it up, and, as I was rushing in upon him, he presented the Points of both Swords to me; bidding me *keep off; you are disarm'd; there, take your Sword; you have run me through; but I am a Man of Honour.* He had no sooner spoke these Words, but he fell down dead; upon which I immediately thought of nothing else but how to get off, by making my way thro' the Populace that were assembled.

1677.

As much disturb'd in my Mind as I was at that Juncture, I cou'd not help admiring the Generosity of the Chevalier, who spar'd my Life when it was in his Power to have taken it; and who had so much Honour as to moderate his Passion in his last Moments. And as I now write this in cool Blood, I actually think it so gallant an Action, that it doubles the Concern I always had for having taken away the Life of so generous an Enemy, tho' in Defence of my own.

His Reflection on the Chevalier's Generosity in sparing his Life.

THO' this Duel made too great a Noise for me to expect that the Law wou'd

1677.

The Count's
good For-
tune in e-
scaping Pro-
secution.

wou'd take no Cognizance of it, yet there was an apparent Disposition to favour me; for in the Information which was granted to prosecute the Murderer, my Name was not mention'd, but a Person unknown was accus'd of committing it. The Chevalier *de Gourdon's* Father, who was extremely afflicted for the Death of his Son, sent a Gentleman to the Spot to inform himself of the Truth of the Fact, and being convinc'd that we had done nothing irregular, he enter'd no Process. Here I cannot but reflect, that if they who made me restore the Chevalier's Sword, had taken the wise Precautions I mention'd before, this Misfortune wou'd never have happen'd.

His Journey to *Brest*, and sudden Escape from it, upon Advice of a War-rant to apprehend him.

WHEN my Wound was cur'd, I went to *Brest*, thinking the unhappy Affair was entirely hush'd; but as a Man is seldom without some Enemy he does not dream of, one *Burgues*, a Man to whom I never did Good nor Harm, wrote to M. COLBERT, that I had fought a Duel with the Chevalier *de Gourdon*, and kill'd him. The Minister, in pure Complaisance to the Bailiff *de Fourbin*, acquainted him of the ill Office that had been done to me; and said, that he cou'd not avoid giving Orders to take me up. The Bailiff, however, obtain'd the Favour of him

to

1677.

to defer issuing his Warrant till the next Post, to give time at least for the Bailiff to advertise me of it, which he did accordingly; and by the same Post I receiv'd 20 Letters upon that Account from as many different Persons; which were all in this Stile: *Upon Receipt of these Lines, be gone from Brest, and change your Name; for Orders are given to apprehend you.* I took the Hint, and set out Post for *Paris*.

As the King never pardon'd Duellists, I wrote to my Brother in *Provence*, to cause fresh Articles to be exhibited against me, and to bring on my Trial. What I desir'd, was obtain'd without much Difficulty; the Parliament of *Aix* condemn'd me to lose my Head; and it appearing by the Process, that I had not fought a Duel, I easily obtain'd a Pardon, which I pleaded after a few Hours Imprisonment at *Aix*, whether I immediately set out; and thus my Affair was ended. As soon as I was at Liberty, my Family, who had their Reasons for my not staying in the Country, furnish'd me with a little Mule; after which I was oblig'd to think of returning forthwith to settle myself in my former Employment.

BEING at *Lyons*, I fell in with the Carrier going to *Paris*, who goes that Road so often, that Travellers are glad

His Trial at *Aix*, with his Condemnation, Imprisonment and Pardon.

of

1677.

His Departure to
Paris in
Company
with an Ec-
clesiastick.

of his Company. A Canon of *Chartres* was along with him also, who came from *Marseilles*, and had given him his Portmanteau to carry. The Canon being mounted on a very pretty, black Mare, I rode up to him, and when I found from whence he came, we soon scrap'd Acquaintance.

WE travel'd all three together two Days, and lay at the same Inn; but being always very meanly lodg'd, and forc'd to pay extraordinary for what we had; the Canon and I resolv'd to quarter by ourselves at Night, and keep Company with the Carrier by Day. In this we found our Account considerably, for we not only far'd better, but cheaper.

Their Adventure
with a couple of Gen-
tlemen of
the Road.

WHEN we arriv'd at *Coni*, we found two Gentlemen going into the Inn, both in the same Dress, like Officers of the Army. We all din'd together, when they took an Opportunity to ask us whither we were bound; and hearing that the Abbé had left his Portmanteau with the Carrier, they offer'd him, very courteously to take Charge of it for him; saying, that one of them wou'd carry it behind him; that they perfectly knew the Road to *Paris*; that they were exceeding well mounted; and that if we wou'd but keep up with them, we shou'd be the sooner at our Journey's End. The Canon thank'd

them

1677.

them for their kind Offer ; but as we were resolv'd to go on in the Pace we had begun, they kept Company with us, and we all lay together at *Briare*. Next Day we din'd at *Nogent*, and determin'd to sup at *Montargis*, having left the Carrier a pretty way behind, not able to travel so fast as we did, because he had the Care of several laden Beasts. We were almost within a League of *Montargis*, when the two Gentlemen propos'd a By-Road to us thro' a Wood, which, they said, wou'd cut off a great deal of Ground. We acquiesc'd, without the least Mistrust of any thing ; but had not gone far, when one of them, while the other jogg'd on with the Abbé, stop'd behind, and turning his Head about, I saw, thro' the Wood, that he was examining the Prime of his Pistol.

THEN I began, for my own Part, to smell a Rat ; and seeing him advancing my Way, I turn'd a little out of the Road, and also took out my Pistol, pretending to see if it was in order. He ask'd me what I was doing ; upon which I said, that while we were in a Wood, it was highly necessary to be upon our Guard. We rode for some time Side by Side ; but when I saw that he was endeavouring to get before me, I put on my Mule, and calling to the Canon,

1677.

Canon, I spoke to him softly, ‘ M.
 ‘ l’Abbé, *said I*, we are in bad Com-
 ‘ pany ; for these two Companions of
 ‘ ours have certainly Mischief in their
 ‘ Hearts ; which, I take it, concerns
 ‘ you more than myself, who have no
 ‘ great Matter to lose ; however, hap-
 ‘ pen what will, examine your Pistols ;
 ‘ mine are in good Order ; take Cou-
 ‘ rage, and let us not be off of our
 ‘ Guard, if there be Occasion.’ The
 Canon, who was a hen-hearted Soldier,
 being frightened out of his Wits at what
 I had been saying, took out his Pistols
 trembling, and survey’d them in a man-
 ner as if he scarce knew what he was
 doing ; insomuch, that had it been at
 a more favourable Time and Place, I
 shou’d have laugh’d heartily to see how
 pale and wild he look’d. I did all that
 was in my Power to hearten him. *Said*
I, ‘ Let us keep these two Sparks be-
 ‘ fore us ; if they attack us, then we
 ‘ will make the best Defence we can.’
 When the Gentlemen perceiv’d that we
 mistrusted them, they were full of their
 Jest upon it. In the mean-time, we
 were got out of the Wood into the
 High-Road, and arriv’d at *Montargis*
 in very good time.

ONE wou’d have thought there had
 been an End now of this Adventure ;
 but notwithstanding our Suspicions, our
 unknown

1677.

Unknown Companions were so far from being re-buff'd, that they offer'd to lodge with us. At Supper they renew'd their Banter upon our pannic Terror, and made an Offer again to the Abbé to carry his Portmanteau for him, which he cou'd not persuade himself by any means to trust them with. At last, Bed-time being come, we were all four put into one Chamber with three Beds in it, where I snor'd soundly; but the Canon was so terrify'd, that he cou'd not sleep a wink.

Two Hours after we were in Bed, when they might naturally think we were both asleep, one of our Highway-men (for such they actually were) struck Fire; upon which the Canon hawk'd and spit, to let them know he was awake; and they asking him whether he was asleep, *How was it possible*, said he, *I cou'd sleep, when you make such an outrageous Noise all Night?* The good Abbé, half dead with Fear, call'd out several times to awake me, but finding that wou'd not do, he got out of Bed; and when he had rous'd me, *Let us go back*, said he, *and meet the Carrier; for these two Men intend us no Good.* When they saw that we fully knew what they were, they did not push the Point any farther: So that early next Morning they left us, and in four Days we arriv'd at

Paris;

1677.

Their happy Deliverance and Arrival at Paris.

Paris; where we embrac'd one another upon our happy Deliverance, and then each went his way about his own Affairs.

It happen'd, that the King was at that time in the Army, and all his Ministers with him; particularly the Minister of the *Marine*: And the worst on't was, that I had not Money enough to subsist me till he return'd. But BONTEMS, the King's First Valet de Chambre, who was my special Friend, undertook to restore me to my Employment, and to get my Name put down for the Station at *Toulon*; withal, assuring me, that I might return to *Provence*, and leave the Care of it to him. Upon his Promise, I made Money of my Mule, and prepar'd to be gone. The Night before I went, as I was passing thro' the *Greve*, three Highwaymen were going to be broke upon the Wheel; and stopping to see the Execution, I presently discover'd among those Wretches, one of the two Fortune-hunters with whom the Canon and I had so lately fallen in Company. The Caitiff was a very remarkable Person; for his Jaw was sadly batter'd and bruise'd, which I remember he told us upon the Road, was owing to a Musket-Shot he receiv'd at a Siege. I then plainly saw the Danger we had escap'd; for I heard,

The Count sees one of their Companions executed there

that

that those two Miscreants belong'd to a Gang of 36 more of the same kind. I sought after the Abbé, to tell him what I had seen, not doubting, that he wou'd be very glad to find that he came off so well; but I cou'd not hear of him, and have never seen him since.

1677.



WHEN I was proposing to return to *Tboulon*, as *Bontems* and I had agreed, my Family, in order to do a Pleasure to the *Chevalier de Gourdon's* Father, and to make him some Kind of Satisfaction, in Acknowledgment of his Civility to me, thought fit to send me to *Brest*, in the Place of one of my Brothers an Ensign of the Marine, whose ill State of Health disabled him from Serving. We were, within a Trifle, both of the same Age and Stature, so that the Exchange was not minded, and I was admitted, in his Place, without any Difficulty. As soon as I arrived I was imployed in exercising the Marines, which, as painful as it was, I acquitted myself with so much Circumspection that our Commanders quickly perceived it, and publickly declared their Satisfaction.

He goes to *Brest*, as Ensign of the Marine.

AFTER a little more than two Years stay, at *Brest*, I was sent to the Station at *Roche fort*, where I went on Board the Squadron commanded by the Count *Estrees* Vice Admiral, which sailed to

1680.



His Voyage to the *American* Islands.

1680.



Their noble
Entertain-
ment at
Carthagena.

the *American* Islands. We visited the Coasts of *New Spain*, and touch'd at *Curassaw*, *St. Martha*, and the City of *Carthagena*: We were then at Peace with the *Spaniards*, and the Marquis d'Estrees Son to the Vice Admiral having a Mind to go ashore, to visit the Governor, I was named to be one of his Retinue. The Governor gave us a very magnificent Repast (tho' a bad one for a Fish Day) insomuch that it would have been difficult to have made an Addition to the Profusion with which we were served; but every Thing being dress'd after the *Spanish* Mode, we cou'd not relish it.

The Reason
why the Go-
vernors of
the *Spanish*
West-Indies
make use of
such heavy
Plate.

WE were surprized at the Form of their Spoons and Forks; for one Piece served for both, supplying a Spoon at one End, and a Fork at the other, so that we were obliged to turn them up and down in our Hands, as Occasion requir'd. What was more singular than all, was to see we were served in such massy Plate, that one single Dish would easily make four of the strongest, after the French Manner. I was so curious as to ask a *Spaniard* why their Plate was so heavy, and he gave me for Answer, that the Viceroy and other Governors in the *Indies*, were forbid to return to *Spain* with Coined Money, but having the Liberty of carrying away a

much

much Plate as they pleased, they never fail'd to make it turn to Account.

The Storms of Thunder and Lightning common in those Parts, and how they are dispersed.

WHILE we stay'd upon these Coasts we observed every Evening about four o' Clock, such Clouds gather round the Horizon, darting Lightning, and follow'd with terrible Claps of Thunder, as always made great Havock in the Town over which they broke. The Count *d'Estrees* who was no Stranger to these Coasts, and who, in his several Voyages to *America*, had been exposed more than once to these Storms, had found a Way to disperse them by the Firing of Cannon. By the same Method he dispersed those we saw, which the *Spaniards* perceiving, and, that at the second or third Discharge, the Clouds were intirely scatter'd, they thought it such a Prodigy, and were at such a Loss to account for it, that they seemed to be both surprized and terrified, so that we had much ado to convince them that there was nothing in it more than what was natural.

Their Departure to *St. Domingo*, and Discovery of a great Wreck of Merchant Ships.

FROM *Carthagena* we sailed for *Petit Guavas* a Colony belonging to the *French*, or *Buccaniers* in the Isle of *St. Domingo*. When we arrived in this Road, we found Twenty five *French* Merchant Ships aground Fifty Paces from the Shoar, having been drove thither by a Hurricane, which was so

violent

1680. violent that, out of the whole Fleet, there was only one single Frigate of the King's, commanded by M. de Quoins, which, having good Cables and Anchors, was not drove ashore, as the rest were, but sustain'd the Fury of the Storm till it was beat to Pieces and sunk. Hurricanes, generally speaking, are so violent upon all this Coast, that we observed most of the Trees had lost Branches, and the Roofs of many Houses built with Stone, were quite blown away.

Frequent
Hurricanes
there.

The Bucca-
neers Plun-
der of Mare-
caille.

Their Com-
mander's
great
Wealth and
his vast Wa-
ger offered
to the M.
d'Estrees at
the Game of
Passage.

Crocodile-
hunting by
the Count
and a Fryer.

IN this Island we found a Company of *Buccaniers*, who had been plundering the Town of *Marecaille* in *New-Spain*, from whence they brought an immense Booty, especially in Pieces of Eight, of which every Man had his Load. The best Part of our Time was spent in making merry with them; and one Day *Gramont* their Commander playing at Passage with the Marquis *d'Estrees*, set him 10000 Pieces of Eight, and made him quit the Dice; for the Marquis, tho' a considerable Lord, did not think himself an equal Match for a Gamester, who, perhaps, had 200000 Pieces of Eight in his Chest.

WHILE we lay in this Road, we saw a *Cahiman*, which is a Sort of Crocodile, skimming along the Surface of the Water. My Desire to pursue it, made

ma
Cha
cole
but
foor
cod
gro
with
Par
poor
with
the
whic
with
and
whil
Tor
wher
with
upon
his E
there
Hun
lives
not
my
T
turne
of Ne
we we
which
chopp
West

1680.

made me jump into a Canoe, and the Chaplain of the Ship, who was a Re-colet Friar, would needs go with me ; but he had Reason to repent of it very soon, for as we were pursuing the Crocodile among a Parcel of Shrubs that grow in the Sea, we were horribly stung with Muskettoes, whose Bites, in that Part of the World, are venomous. The poor Friar, who had only a Gown on, without Drawers, became, in a Moment, the Prey of Thousands of these Insects, which stinging him from Head to Foot with all their Rage, he was so swell'd, and in such a lamentable Pickle, that, while he was groaning under intolerable Torture, I carried him aboard again, where he was blooded, bath'd all over with Brandy, and, with much ado, set upon his Legs again, after he had kept his Bed a whole Fortnight. I believe therefore he has Cause to remember the Hunting of the Cahiman as long as he lives ; And for my own Part, I did not come off without some Stings in my Face and Hands.

The Fryar
is hunted
and stung
to Death al-
most by
Muskettoes.

THE Count having set sail, we returned from *Petit Guavas* to the Coasts of *New-Spain*. When we arrived there, we were surprized to find that the Winds which commonly blow there at East, chopp'd about all on a sudden to the South West, so that taking the Opportunity

Their Re-
turn to
New Spain.

1680. of so fair a Wind, while the Current ran to the East, we coasted along till we came to Cape *del Draco*, where is a fine large Bay, in which we cast Anchor. The *Spaniards*, who are Masters of the Country, tho' we were at Peace, did not care to let us land, or to furnish us with the necessary Refreshments. The Sloops and Canoes being at a neighbouring Island for Hunting and Fewel, above Thirty Officers of us went ashore and shot at some Fowl: At the Report of our Guns, there was such a frightful Noise in the Forest, as if an Army was marching against us. We kept together in a Body, not imagining what should be the Matter, but as the Noise grew stronger and seemed nearer, after a little Deliberation what Course to take, we resolved to retire, and were actually returning aboard with great Precipitation, when an *American* Officer who was hard by, tho' we did not see him, lifted up his Voice, laugh'd at us for being in such a Terror, and when his Laughter was over, *Follow me, Gentlemen*, says he, *the Noise which has so much terrified you, is only the Chattering of a Company of Monkeys.* He told us the Truth.

They are
frighten'd
ashore by
Monkeys.

Their En-
gagement
with the
Monkeys.

BEING hearten'd by what he said, we advanced into the Forest, where we actually found above a Thousand of those

those
with
a H
all t
ter'd
scarce
these
great
near
Seam
we w
ten
Thic
into
FLA
a lon
took
self
when
Chev
cape
Crew
his C
belon
ster
T
far a
much
to M
to F
un-r
loug
Adv

1680.

those Monkeys, which we attack'd, without any Ceremony, kill'd about a Hundred of them on the Spot, and all the rest fled quite off, or else shelter'd themselves in the Wood. I have scarce ever seen larger Monkeys than these were: They had red Hair, a great Face, and a long Beard, weighed near Sixty Pound apiece, and the Seamen eat them with a Gust. While we were ashore, a Snake, which was ten Foot long, and half a Foot in Thickness, climb'd up, by the Rudder, into the Canoe of the *Chevalier de FLACOURT LE BRET*; tho' it hiss'd a long Time in the Master's Ears, he took no Notice of it, or troubled himself from whence the Noise came. But when we were embark'd again, and the *Chevalier* perceived it, he made his Escape with a great Outcry, as did the whole Crew, except the Master alone, who stood his Ground, and, with a great Hook, belonging to the Vessel, struck the Monster such a Blow as kill'd him.

The Description of these Animals.

And of a great Snake that got into one of their Canoes.

THE Season being at this Time, too far advanced for that Sea to be tenable much longer, the Squadron returned to *Martinico*, and sailing from thence to *France*, we put into *Rochefort* to un-rig. I soon after obtained my Furlough, and went to Court, to solicit my Advancement, spending the rest of that

The Return of the Squadron to *Martinico*, and from thence to *France*.

Year, and all the following, partly at Court, and partly at *Rochefort*, without any Employment.

1682.

The Count's
Return to
Toulon, &c.

THE Year after that, I had Orders to return to *Toulon*, where I found my worthy Friend the Abbé *de Luc*, Nephew to the Bishop, and his Grand Vicar, by whom I was received in the most cordial Manner that could be. Nothing would serve him, but I must lodge with him, and he always treated me as if I had been his Brother.

His Voyage
with the
Fleet that
went to
bombard
Algier.

I EMBARK'D that same Year, with the Marquis *de la Porte*, on Board the Fleet that went to bombard *Algier*, under the Command of M. *Duquene*, which no sooner came before the Place, but we began to make the *Algerines* feel our Bombs. The continual Fire we made upon the Town put the Inhabitants into such a Consternation, that the King fearing they would Mutiny, begg'd a Peace in all Haste, but his Proposals were not hearken'd to, nor the Hostilities suspended, till the *Algerines* had restored Four hundred *French* Slaves, whom at several Times they had taken Prisoners. All the other Articles being settled on both Sides, a Turk named MEZAMORTE, who had a Cottage in *Algier*, was the only Man that hinder'd the Peace: He began with engaging the *Taif* or the Soldiers in his Party, and then

The *Algerines* sue
for a Peace,
which is ob-
structed by
a single
Turk, who
destroy'd
the King
and set up
himself.

then
the cl
Head
put h
being
was
Atta
than
ince
those
they
into
off i
Cru
Man
Slave
Mou
Lim
shot
such
noth
of.

I
carry
Flee
a sec
Algie
Mar
being
have
Mar
the
the

then raising the Populace, he seiz'd 1682.
the chief Posts of the City, cut off the
Head of the King BABAHASSAN, and
put himself in his Throne. The Truce
being broke by this Revolution, which
was brought about in one Day, the
Attack was renewed with more Fury
than ever. The new Bombs that play'd
incessantly upon the Town, so enrag'd
those Barbarians, that to be reveng'd,
they seiz'd the *French* Consul, put him
into one of their Mortars, and shot him
off instead of a Bomb: Nor did their
Cruelty stop there, for in the same
Manner they treated several *French*
Slaves, whom they bound to the
Mouths of their Cannon, so that the
Limbs of those poor Christians were
shot aboard us every Day, which was
such a Spectacle of Inhumanity, that
nothing but *African* Barbarism is capable
of.

The Barba-
rity of the
Besieged,
who charge
their Bombs
& Cannon
with living
Men.

It being too late in the Year to
carry on the Siege any longer, the
Fleet return'd to *Toulon*, where while
a second Armament was preparing for
Algier, I had Orders to exercise the
Marines and Grenadiers. The Court
being resolved, cost what it wou'd, to
have Satisfaction of the *Algerines*, the
Marquis de Segnelay, the Minister of
the Marine, came to *Toulon* to give
the Orders in Person, on purpose that
there

The Return
of the Fleet
to *Toulon*.

1682. there might be nothing wanting in this new Armament. His Stay here gave occasion to the Commanding Officer of the Port to shew him the Method of training the Soldiers to the Exercife of the Grenado.

An Exercife of the Grenadiers there for the Diversion of the French Minister.

To this end having order'd a fort of Well to be made, form'd of Planks fet Ridge-wife, he caus'd a high Covert to be rais'd, from whence the Minister might easily see the Exercife, without being expos'd. Major *Raymondis* and I were at the Edge of the Well, without any Shelter, from whence we gave our Orders to the Soldiers who were in a Trench. A clumsy Dog of a Grenadier threw a Grenado, which pitch'd just by *Raymondis*, who for Shelter, leap'd to the other Side, and the very next Moment another Grenadier having also miss'd the Well, threw a second Grenado just at my Feet, which I took up with my Hand, and going to throw it, the Shell burst in the Air, insomuch that my Head narrowly miss'd being wounded by one of the Splinters, which made a Hole in the Brim of my Hat. A third Grenadier, who was as awkward as the other Two, miss'd the Mark likewise, his Granado falling a good Distance from *Raymondis*, who being alham'd that he had run away from the first, and that I had the

the Courage to take up the Shell 1682.
 which pitch'd just by me, ran and took
 up the last, and threw it into the Well.
 The Minister was well pleas'd with
 this Emulation, but he order'd a Stop
 to be put to the Sport, and said, that
 if it held any longer, the two young
 Gentlemen would infallibly be kill'd.

BEFORE we set out for *Algier*, fe-
 veral Officers presented their Projects
 for the ensuing Campaign; that given
 in by the Commadore *de Levi*, was ap-
 prov'd at first Sight. Two monstrous
 Bombs were made; which held four-
 score Quintals of Powder, and were to
 be put on board two Tartanes. It
 was reckon'd they wou'd cause such a
 Shock when they fell, as wou'd make
 the Mole tumble down, and thereby
 render the Descent less difficult, after
 which it wou'd be easy to burn all the
 Ships in the Harbour. But *Duquene*,
 who commanded the Troops, made
 so many Exceptions against this Pro-
 ject, that it was dropp'd.

Projects
 propos'd for
 next Cam-
 paign.

THE Troops were embark'd at 1683.
Toulon, and the Soldiers of the Port,
 the Grenadiers and supernumerary Offi-
 cers, had Orders to follow. I went
 on board the Ship of *M. Duquene*, Son
 to the General. The King's Gallies
 commanded by the Bailiff *de Noailles*,
 of one of which the Count *de Luc* was
 Captain,

Another
 Expedition
 to *Algier*.

1683. Captain, had Orders also to be gone and join the Squadron before *Algier*. As the Project above-mentioned for the Descent was quash'd, the supernumerary Officers had little or nothing to do. That I might keep myself in Action, for I shou'd have been ashamed to be at my Ease and Security, while so many of my Comrades were in Motion and Danger, I desir'd Major *Raymondis*, who acted Night and Day upon Occasion, to give me Leave to accompany him. Besides the keeping of myself employ'd, my chief View was to learn the Art of War, and to inure myself to Danger. *Raymondis*, who was my particular Friend, granted me whatever I pleas'd, so that I never left him.

The Author's fondness for Action.

His good Cheer on account of his good Humour.

THE Count *de Luc* being charm'd to see my good Disposition, and knowing that I had but mean Sustenance aboard my Ship, took Care to send his Felucca for me every Morning to give me good Cheer. Having observ'd that he lov'd to know what was doing, partly to divert him at Table, and in some sort to acknowledge his Goodness to me, I us'd to give him a Narrative of what Engagements I had been in the Day before, and was so particular in my Detail, as to tell him the exact Number of the Kill'd and Wound-

1683.

Wounded. Two Officers of the Galley who were present at these Stories, whether they doubted of the Truth of what I told them, or whether they were willing to see how it was with their own Eyes, desir'd me to take them along with me: *That I will,* said I, *with all my Heart; be you ready to Morrow.*

MEAN time our Bombs did great Execution. M. Duquene, who came ^{Alger} thither only to force the *Algerines* to be bombard'd. to beg a Peace, caus'd their Town to be bombard'd in the Day-time, and for that End had posted the Bomb-Gallies so as to be out of the Reach of Cannon Shot. At Night I sent to the two Officers who had desired me to take them along with me, to put them in mind of their Promise; and to assure them that they might expect me next Day in a Canoe, and that they shou'd have an Opportunity to be satisfy'd. They came accordingly; and that they might pay for their Curiosity, I presently put them on board the Galley which was most expos'd to the Enemy's Fire. When we came into the Cabbin we found the Officers of the Bombardiers, for all the Noise of the great Guns, and the Whizz of the Bullets about their Ears, breaking their Fast very calmly upon a Gammon of Bacon.

I sat

1683.

I sat down and took a Slice with them. Mean time the Fire of the Cannon, &c. was doubled, upon which my two Gentlemen (the Officers of the Galley) soon repented of their Curiosity, which I immediately perceiv'd; but having a Mind that they shou'd speak first, I did not seem to have the least Suspicion of it, till at length being tir'd of this Frolick, and scar'd beyond measure; *We have had enough on't*, said they, *let us return; our Curiosity is satisfy'd; this is a Place too dangerous for People that have no Business in it.*

THO' the Bombs which play'd Day and Night made terrible Havock in the Town, yet the *Algerines* did not seem to be daunted. M. Duquene, in order to force them to Terms, caus'd four Sloops to be Mann'd out in the Form of a Floating Half-Moon, which were cover'd with Matrasses to shelter the Bombardiers and Seamen; and these Sloops were supported by Ten others well arm'd, and by four Gallies.

THE Sloops which were drawn out in the Shape of a Half-Moon, had each a Mortar charg'd with a Carcass, *i. e.* a Sort of Bomb with Holes in it, and fill'd with Combustibles. They had Orders to advance within Musket-Shot of the Mole: It was not doubted that the Carcasses falling upon the Enemy's

my's
The
of th
and,
fail t
Upon
Carce
who
fo gr
&c.
woun
Brea
Seam
all
Vess
then
that
Har
who
pres
mon
for
beir
fo
Dar
me
to
this
Car
we
Fin
cal

my's Ships wou'd set them on Fire. The Person appointed for the Direction of the Attack, was Major *Raymondis*, and, according to Custom, I did not fail to embark with him in his Canoe. Upon the very first Discharge of the Carcasses from our Sloops, the Enemy who were posted upon the Mole, made so great a Fire from their small Arms, &c. that we had five Men kill'd and wounded in our Canoe, which had no Breast-work nor Covering, and our Seamen were so frighten'd, that they all crept down in the Hold of the Vessel, and we were not able to rouse them, say what we cou'd, insomuch that we were forc'd, with Sword in Hand, to threaten the Lives of those who refused to obey. The Fear of present Death having render'd them more pliant, I took to the Steerage; for the Master was kill'd, and all Hands being employ'd, we work'd the Ship so well, that we were quickly out of Danger. *Raymondis* never fail'd to tell me afterwards how much he was oblig'd to me for the Resolution I shew'd upon this Occasion. Our Sloops with the Carcasses did so little Execution, and were besides so gall'd by the Enemy's Fire, that M. *Duquene* thought fit to call them off from that Service.

1683.

ALL the rest of this Campaign the numerous Bombs rattled over the Town like Thunder, during which there perished an infinite Number of poor Christians, whom the Barbarians continually shot out of the Mouths of their Cannon. This Inhumanity gave Occasion for a generous Action which I think ought not to be omitted. The Captain of an *Algerine* Corsair, which the *Chevalier de Levi* had formerly taken in some cruising Voyage, and to whom he had been very civil, as had all his Officers, happened to be at *Algier*, and was witness of the Barbarity with which the Christians were treated. It fell out that *Choiseuil*, one of the *Chevalier de Levi*'s Officers having the Misfortune to be taken Prisoner, was condemn'd to undergo the Destiny which had put an End to the Lives of so many others. Just as he was going to Execution, the *Turkish* Captain discovered him, and being moved with Pity, for the Misfortune of a Person who had formerly done him a Pleasure, he left no Stone unturn'd to save him from Death; but not being able to prevail for his Pardon, and seeing him ty'd to the Cannon, whatever he cou'd say or do in his Favour, he ran to him like a Man in Despair, embrac'd him closely, and turning

A noble Instance of the Gratitude of a Turk to a Frenchman

urnin
aid h
ll dy
TH
of th
Office
Clima
tis e
will n
the C
Hear
to Fr
Qual
himse
Insta
certa
civili
I
keep
leavi
Ruini
of a
so t
the
the
stru
fear
to
me
hun
En
it

turning to the Gunner, *Fire the Cannon,* 1683.
 said he, *since I can't save my Benefactor,*
I'll dye with him.

THE King, who was an Eye-witness of this, relented, and pardon'd the Officer; so true is it, that there's no Climate where Virtue, especially when 'tis exerted in the highest Degree, will not gain Respect, and triumph in the Conquest of the most insensible Hearts. *Choiseuil* returning afterwards to *France*, serv'd there a long time in Quality of a Subaltern, and it was he himself that entertain'd me with the Instance I have mention'd, which wou'd certainly be a great Honour to the most civiliz'd Nations.

IT being too late in the Year to keep the Sea, the Fleet sail'd away, leaving the Town full of Murders, Ruin, and all the horrible Consequences of a tedious and bloody Expedition; so that the *Algerines*, notwithstanding the Resolution they had shewn during the Bombardment, were in the Main struck with such a Consternation, that fearing a third Attack, they prepar'd to prevent it, by imploring the Clemency of the King, of whom they humbly begg'd Peace by a solemn Embassy, which I shall not insist on, it being foreign to my Subject.

The Return
 of the Fleet
 to *France*.

The *Alge-*
rines sue to
 the King
 for a Peace.

THE

1683.

THE Fleet being arriv'd at Toulon, and unrigg'd, the Officers thought of nothing more than how to make themselves amends for the Fatigues of the Campaign by the Pleasures of the Winter. For my own Part, I had a great Desire to go to Court, to mend my small Fortune; but Want of Money, the eternal Bar to all my Projects, had prevented me in this too, had not the Count de Luc stood my Friend. When he was inform'd of my Condition, *Cousin*, said he, embracing me, *don't trouble your self about the Expence of the Journey, I'll pay your Charges.* We set forwards, and I had not been long at Court before I was made Lieutenant of a Ship.

The Count's
Journey to
Court, and
Advance-
ment.

I receiv'd Orders at the same Time to repair to Rochefort, to fit out a Vessel to carry the Marquis de Forey to Portugal, whither the King was sending him to compliment the new King Don Pedro on his Accession to the Crown.

His Jour-
ney to Blois

I travell'd Post in extraordinary cold Weather, so that when I came within Six Leagues of Blois, I found the Roads so damag'd by the Ice and Cart-routs, that my Horse tumbled with me often, tho' without any Harm, till the last time of all, when falling upon his Nose, the Head-stall of the Bridle broke. Being unwilling to alight, I bad

I bad the Postillion dismount to set it
 to rights; but the Brute said, *Since I
 sell so often, I might do it myself.* I was
 stung with this insolent Answer; but
 because I cou'd not well do without
 him, I conceal'd my Resentment, and
 said to him, *Friend, do me the Favour
 to alight and mend the Head-stall; I have
 no String, or else I wou'd save you the
 Trouble.* This courteous Intreaty pre-
 vail'd on him to consent to what I desir'd
 of him; tho' as soon as he had done me
 that Service, I drew my Sword and
 chastis'd him as his Insolence deserv'd:
 But when he remounted his Horse, he
 gave me foul Language, and threaten'd
 that I should pay for it when we came
 to Blois. With that I instantly drew
 my Sword again, saying, *There was no
 Occasion to go so far, I love to pay my
 Scores upon the Spot,* and gave him a
 second Lesson to the same Tune. He
 pretended to defend himself with his
 Whip, upon which I renew'd my
 Attack, and having taken good Aim
 where to prick him, I gave him a slight
 Wound in his Side, after which he
 was as mute as I cou'd wish.

ANY Man that saw him, wou'd
 have imagin'd he had been soundly
 thrash'd, for he had lost his Hat, and
 his Face was all over bloody. When
 we came to our Journey's End, the
 Post-

1683.
 His Treat-
 ment from
 saucy Postil-
 lions.

1683. Post-Master was so far from being surpriz'd at the Disorder he saw us in, that he said to me, ' It looks, Sir, as if you had had some Controversy with this Rascal. Very true, said I, but he has no Reason to complain, he has been paid in ready Money, yet he threaten'd to be reveng'd when we came to *Blois*. Oh! Sir, *reply'd the Post-Master*, he is the arrantest Rogue upon all this Road; he is perfectly incorrigible, for 'tis not two Years ago that a Courier, whom he had thoroughly provok'd, was forc'd to give him a Rap with his Pistol, which broke his Shoulder-bone.' During this short Confabulation, I prepar'd to take Horse, and not dreaming of the Postillion, who I thought was far enough from me, I saw him running in all haste with a Pitchfork to stick me. I had but time to take out my Pistol, and was just going to shoot him, when the Master ran to him with a Cudgel, and after having disarm'd him, belabour'd him so roughly, that the Rascal thought he had enough. This done, I mounted my Horse, and was turning out of the Stable-yard, when the Fellow, with as much Demureness in his Looks, as if he had known nothing of the Matter, came and begg'd of me to give him some-

1683.

something to drink. I was quite lost in Admiration of the Rascal's Stupidity, and throwing him a few Pieces, *There,* said I, *drink my Health, thou hast dearly earn'd it.*

FROM Blois I travell'd very quietly to Poitiers: But it was determin'd by Fate, that I shou'd be plagu'd with Postillions all the Way. As I was mounted and turning out of the Inn, the Post-Master attending, I said to the Postillion, *Courage, my Friend, push on.* His Answer was, 'Push on your self, if you are in such Haste. Hark ye, Sirrah, said I with Eyes full of Wrath and Indignation, I tell thee here before thy Master, who no doubt is worse than thy self, for keeping such an insolent Fellow, that if thou art guilty of the least Impertinence to me, I will break thy Head with my Pistol.' This Menace made him very tractable, so that he had some pleasant Story or other to tell me all that Day's Journey. At Mousse, where I was again to change Horses, I was accosted by a third Postillion with great Whiskers cock'd up, a Sabre by his Side, and a Pair of Pistols in his Saddle-Bow: By this Equipage, I imagin'd that we shou'd not part without a Quarrel, and that I shou'd be under a Necessity of fighting with this Man too.

His Journey to Poitiers.

1683.



too. Therefore I took out one of my Pistols, and said to the Fellow, that as I foresaw we should have an Engagement upon the Road, it wou'd be better to have one Touch before we went; but the Master coming to us that Moment, put an End to the Noise, disarm'd the Postillion, and then we set out.

He is lost
in a Fog.

I HAD travel'd about two Stages, when the Night surpriz'd us with a very cold Fog, so thick, that I cou'd not see my Hand. By this Means we miss'd our Way, and after having travel'd for some time, we knew not where, and in Danger of losing ourselves, we were forc'd to alight. I don't remember that I was ever in a Situation more disagreeable. I was so raving mad, that I cou'd have kill'd the Postillion for leading me out of the Way; but the poor Wretch answer'd me, as often as I threaten'd him, *Alas, Sir! What if you shou'd kill me? you wou'd not be a Step the more forward in your Journey.* He was certainly in the right. Mean-time, having consider'd how to extricate ourselves out of this Perplexity, I bethought myself to bid the Fellow smack his Whip, in hopes that somebody or other might chance to hear us, and set us into the Road.

I WAS

1683.

I WAS not mistaken in my Con-
 jecture. At the Noise he made, a Dog
 bark'd, which I imagin'd wou'd not
 have been out in such cold Weather,
 if he had not some Retreat at Hand;
 therefore, I order'd my Guide to con-
 tinue making a Noise, till we came
 within Hearing of some human Voice.
 After having walk'd in this manner a
 few Paces, we were stopp'd by a great
 Ditch full of Water half frozen over,
 which we follow'd above a quarter of
 Hour, and cou'd not find a Passage.
 At last, after a great deal of Fatigue,
 we came to the Cottage of a Peasant,
 who being surpriz'd and affrighted to
 see us there so late, and in such bad
 Weather, shut the Door in our Faces.

ALL my Intreaty cou'd not prevail
 upon him to open it, for he wou'd not
 hearken to Reason; till we threaten'd
 to break the Door down: Then he
 open'd it to us, trembling all the while,
 (for he thought we were Thieves.) I
 was quite benumb'd with the Cold, and
 therefore, as soon as we enter'd, I ask'd
 him if he cou'd not make us a Fire, and
 let us have a Lodging with him that
 Night. 'Alas, Sir! you see yourself,
 'said he, I have nothing at all but this
 'sorry Bed, which serves for me and
 'my Wife and Children. But if you
 'will please to go along with me,

His Recep-
 tion by a
 Peasant,

continued

1683.

‘ continued he, I will carry you to the
 ‘ House of an honest *Hugonot* Gentle-
 ‘ man, but two hundred Paces off, who
 ‘ will receive you in an agreeable
 ‘ Manner.

and by a
Hugonot
 Gentleman.

I ACCEPTED his Offer, and about eleven o’Clock at Night, we came to the House of this Gentleman, who indeed receiv’d me very graciously. His Name was M. *de la Riviere*. He presently order’d a great Fire to be made, which was very acceptable, for I had much need of it; and soon after, a Leg of Mutton was brought in with a Couple of Snipes, and some Wine, which tho’ small, was very good to drink, and a fresh Loaf, and I made a Repast, which was the more delicious, because I had fasted all Day. From thence I was conducted to a good Bed, where I slept very sweetly, and made myself ample Amends for the Toil I had suffer’d in my Journey. The next Morning, after Breakfast was serv’d up, I thank’d my Host for all his Civilities, told him my Name, and after having offer’d him all the Service in my Power, I set out for *Rochefort*, where I found my Uncle, who commanded the *Marine*. I made him very merry, by telling him the Adventures of my Journey; and particularly the Civilities of M. *de la Riviere*.

His Journey to *Rochefort*.

IN

IN
 Portug
 (who
 Marqu
 we fail
 to Lis
 with a
 Monar
 King f
 while t
 to him
 Great
 in like
 of the
 againf
 any o
 de Vil
 Wall
 of the
 grave
 the f
 were
 the K
 prefer
 being
 glori
 receiv
 mort
 D
 the f
 but
 mir’
 of th
 V

1683.

His Voyage
to Lisbon.The Audi-
ence of the
French Mi-
nister by the
King of
Portugal.

IN a few Days the Ship, bound for *Portugal*, was ready; M. *de Vilette* (who was to command her) and the Marquis *de Torcy* being both arrived, we sailed, and had a very good Voyage to *Lisbon*. M. *de Torcy* made his Entry with a Magnificence worthy of the Monarch whom he represented. The King sat all the Time of the Audience, while the Ambassador made his Speech to him standing. All the Lords and Great Men of the Court were standing in like manner bare-headed, only those of the first Quality among them, lean'd against a Wall without Tapestry, or any other Ornament. The Marquis *de Vilette* was going to lean against the Wall in like manner, when a Master of the Ceremonies came to him very gravely, and told him, that none but the first Rate Grandees of *Portugal* were permitted to lean in Presence of the King; upon which the Marquis presently chang'd his Posture, but being by Nature somewhat Vain-glorious, this sort of Affront which he received before the whole Nation, mortify'd him not a little.

The Abbey
of Belem.

DURING our Stay at *Lisbon*, we visited the famous Abbey of *Belem*, which is but four Leagues off. There we admir'd the Magnificence of the Tombs of the Kings of *Portugal*, several costly

1683.

Works of Marble, the vast Buildings which form the Monastery, and the Gardens, which are the finest in the Kingdom. The Prior was exceeding complaisant to us, and after we had extoll'd the Beauty of the Place, we discours'd him about the Fryars that live in it: ' Alas! Gentlemen, said he with a Sigh, this Monastery is very much decay'd from its antient Splendor, and is far short of what it was when I first saw it. When I was a young Fryar there, it was a constant Rule for Thirty of us to go out every Night arm'd with a Dagger and a Sword in quest of Adventures; but now this Military Ardour is so far abated, that you shall hardly find Ten or Twelve at most, but what have degenerated and deviated from the Paths of their Ancestors.' At this Speech we all star'd at one another, not knowing what Answer to make, or whether he spoke in earnest or in jest. We were conducted into a magnificent Hall, where we found a Table very well serv'd, at which we sat down with those honest Fathers, whom we regar'd in our Turn with an excellent Concert of Musick which we had brought with us, and which play'd incessantly during the Repast.

I HAVE

I H
that
scant
my
lay
preser
befor
Farm
that
Snuff
Sous
been
but
it wi
apply
him
made
a lu
him
Thin
Neces
Affair
he
when
yet
at m
Mon
Weig
with
vanta
of it
So
Lisbo

1683.

The Author
turns Snuff
Merchant.

I HAVE said more than once already, that my Purse was commonly very scanty, which put me every Day to my Shifts, and made me watchful to lay hold of every Opportunity that presented to get it. Such a one offer'd before I came from *France*, when the Farmers of the Duty on Snuff told me, that if I wou'd bring them some *Brazil* Snuff, they wou'd give me Twenty Sous *per* Pound for it. I should have been a great Gainer by this Bargain; but how was it possible for me to bind it without Money? In this Distress I apply'd to my Uncle, and acquainted him with the Proposal that had been made to me. I attack'd him at such a lucky Minute, turn'd and winded him so many Ways, and said so many Things to convince him, both of my Necessity, and of the Gains which this Affair wou'd bring me in; that though he was naturally very hard-hearted when he was desir'd to open his Purse, yet on my Promise to pay him again at my Return, he generously lent me Money enough to purchase a Hundred Weight of Saffron, which I bought with a View of selling it again to Advantage, and to employ the Produce of it as I had propos'd.

SOME Days after my Arrival at *Lisbon*, I try'd to dispose of what little

1683.



Merchandize I had, sold my Saffron for double the Prime Cost, and laid out all the Money in Snuff. A Week or Ten Days before I came away, I was for putting it on board the Ship that brought us to *Lisbon*: But M. *de Vilette* scrupling to receive any Sort of Merchandize on board the King's Ship, I was oblig'd to put it into the *Traversier* or Ferry-boat, a sort of small Vessel pretty much like a *Tartanne*, which the Governor took along with him for the Occasions of the Ship's Crew.

EVERY thing being ready for our Departure, we only deferr'd sailing till the Minister had his Audience of Leave, which was not many Days after. Mean time the Merchant to whom I had sold my Saffron, came to tell me that if I wou'd come with the King's Sloop to take on board a Jew Family, which shou'd be by Ten a Clock at Night at such a Place, I shou'd have a Present of Two hundred Pistoles, on Condition that they shou'd be entrtain'd at least for two Days on board the King's Ship, and then remov'd to a little Merchant Ship which sail'd for *Bourdeaux*. I heard this Proposal with a vast deal of Pleasure, promis'd to return my Answer in two Days, and went immediately

His Contract to carry over a Jew Family that escap'd from the Inquisition.

medi
who
Bene
at m
me n
swer,
fix'd,
Sloop
T
Perfo
waitin
Capt
Paces
the M
which
the S
to the
was c
from
vanci
a Gh
with
legg'
Hanc
Spad
out o
ner c
came
fente
stand
tripp
Side
witho

mediately to impart it to *M. de Vilette*, who was so fond of procuring me this Benefit, that he said every thing was at my Service, and that he cou'd deny me nothing. In pursuance of this Answer, the Place of Rendezvous was fix'd, and I went thither with my Sloop.

THE Hour being past, and no Person appearing, I was tir'd with waiting; and leaping a Shore with the Captain of a Ship, we went a few Paces to look out. By the Light of the Moon I advanc'd towards a Street, which was Two hundred Paces from the Shore, and bid the Captain to go to the End of it, and see if any body was coming. He had not gone far from me, but I saw something advancing at a few Paces distance, like a Ghost. It was a Man in Drawers with a white Cap on his Head, bare legg'd, carrying a Target in his Left Hand, and in his Right, a long naked Spada, who came up towards me quite out of Breath. Wondering what manner of Man he was, as soon as he came within Six Paces of me, I presented my Pistol to him, and bad him stand; at which Word the Spark tripp'd very nimbly to the other Side of the Street, and went his way without making any Answer.

His Ren-
counter in
the Streets
with a Mad-
man by
Moon-light.

1683.

BEING apprehensive that the Captain, who was at the other End, wou'd be scar'd at the Sight of this Spectre, I follow'd close at his Heels. I was right in my Conjecture of what would have happened if I had not gone after him; for the Captain was really affrighted, and bawl'd out to me with all his Strength, upon which I bad him stand his Ground with Pistol in Hand, saying, that I was coming to assist him, at which Words the Rover, who was probably some Mad-man, went on his Way quietly, without speaking one Word.

THE Moment after, arriv'd the Jew Family, consisting of the Father, the Mother, a little Lad, and a pretty Girl. When we had put them aboard, I ask'd them why they made their Escape? They told me, that they were pursued by the Inquisition, and that if they were apprehended, they should run the Hazard of being burnt alive. The Father paid me the Two hundred Pistoles, which was the Premium that we had settled, and I remov'd my Jews into the Vessel, which, after the Time agreed on, was to carry them to *Bourdeaux*.

As soon as I had pocketed this new Supply, I hasten'd to lay the Money out in Snuff, which I also put on board the

the S
Total
by m
Calc
quick
than
lengt
dienc
Fran
Passa
Storr
from
Sigh
great
my
I wa
not
of B
Unc
New
how
Con
whic
Con
Tru
Lo
M
turn
det
no
had
wit
the

1683.

the Ship's Boat. I often cast up the Total of the Profit that I should gain by my Traffick, and after an exact Calculation, I found that I should quickly be Master of more Money than ever I had in my Life. At length M. de Torcy obtain'd his Audience of Leave, and we sail'd for France. We had a very favourable Passage at setting out; but a great Storm of Wind separated us at last from the Ship's Boat, so that we lost Sight of it, which Disaster was a very great Affliction to me; for it had all my Treasure aboard; and I own that I was quite inconsolable, when I heard not many Days after, that a Corfair of *Biscay* had taken it at *Aserrage*. My Uncle, to whom I imparted this sad News, was truly concern'd to think how much it would hurt me in the Consequence: Indeed his Generosity, which I did not expect, was some Consolation to me; though, to say the Truth, I cou'd never think of my Loss without abundance of Regret.

The Count's
Return for
France.

His Treas-
ure taken
by a Pyrate.

MUCH about the Time of my Return from *Portugal*, the King being determined to bear with the Hugonots no longer, renew'd the Edicts which had been pass'd against them formerly, with Orders to the Intendants to see them strictly put in Execution, with-

Execution
of the Edicts
in France a-
gainst the
Protestants.

1683. out Exception. The punctual Obedience they paid was such, that few of the Hugonots escap'd their Severity. One of the first Men that was molested, was *M. de la Riviere*, who, as I said a while ago, gave me so handsome a Reception, a Man of the first Rank in the Country among those of his Sect, to which he had hitherto shewn the strongest Attachment. Dragoons were quarter'd upon him, who ransack'd his House, so that not knowing what course to take, he came to *Rochefort* to see *M. Arnous*, Intendant of the Province, and to endeavour to make him relax.

As soon as I heard of his Arrival, I went to visit him, and always oppos'd his lodging any where but at our House, that is to say, with my Uncle, who receiv'd him very agreeably, in acknowledgment of the Pleasure he had done me. He also interested himself strenuously in his Behalf, but the Orders of the Court were so positive, that after all his Intreaty, he could not obtain any Favour from him, though he was the Intendant's very particular Friend. *M. de la Riviere* perceiving that he had no other Expedient to try, and that he must either change his Religion or be speedily ruin'd, and being moreover

saway'd

saway'd
which
deter
ration
that
Cath
Mean
he ha
versic
A
my S
now
me t
fairs
the f
thro
there
Roar
and
whic
der'
also
To
Con
go t
mon
ted
fort
hav
we
Co
the
car

sway'd by a Thousand Arguments which I urg'd to him for the Purpose, determin'd at last to make his Abjuration, and I have been told since, that he continues to be a very good Catholick, and that, thanks to the Means us'd by the Dragoons and me, he has never once repented of his Conversion.

1683.

M. de la Riviere turns Roman Catholick.

As the King's Service did not require my Stay at *Rochefort*, for the Season was now far advanc'd, my Uncle advis'd me to go to *Provence* to settle some Affairs which I had in that Country: At the same time he order'd me to pass thro' *Lyons*, and to speak with a Man there who ow'd him some Money. My Road lay thro' *Perigord*, the *Limousin* and *Auvergne*; but the great Snow which cover'd that Country, had render'd it unpassable for a Man who was also an utter Stranger to those Parts. To obviate this Inconveniency, I join'd Company with the Mule-drivers, who go twice a Week from *Limoges* for *Clermont*; but their Pace was so slow and tedious, that I thought it a great Misfortune to be oblig'd to keep it. After having jogg'd on with 'em four Days, we arriv'd at an Inn in a plain, open Country; where, as I was chatting by the Fire-side with the Landlady, six Men came in, who look'd much more like

The Count's Journey to *Provence*.

1683.

Banditti, than any thing else. I ask'd her who they were. *They are* (said she) *Merchants of St. Stephen's, in the Forest, who are just come from the Fair of Bourdeaux: They pass this Way every Year.*

BEING overjoy'd at this News, I paid them a Compliment. We supp'd together, and I kept Company with them for all the rest of the Journey. There fell so much Snow that Night, that the Roads were entirely cover'd with it; but these Merchants had travel'd them so often, that steering their Course by the Observation of the Trees, they never rambled out of the Way. At one time a Jay came and perch'd just before us within Gunshot. One of my Fellow-Travellers, who had a Staff in his Hand, or something that look'd like it, causing the Company to halt, and screwing on some Joints which it contain'd invisibly, he made a compleat Gun of it, with which he shot the Bird dead. We were to part Company at *Tiers*, where I propos'd to strike into the Road to *Lyons*, and they to take that which led to *St. Stephen's*. But I cou'd not resist those Gentlemen who invited me so courteously to go to their Habitation, and so fully gave me to understand, that the Roads from *Tiers* to *Lyons* were impassable,

passable, by reason of the Snow, especially without an experienc'd Guide, that I was won by their Reasons and Civilities, which they repeated for five or six Days, that the bad Weather oblig'd me to spend among them.

FROM St. Stephen's I went to Lyons, and after having discharg'd the Commission there which I had receiv'd from my Uncle, I continued my Journey to Provence, in Company with two Merchants, whom I found at the Inn. Three Days after we arriv'd at Lauriol, where, while Supper was getting ready, a Coach arriv'd with four Horses, in which there was a sick Man, a lusty Woman, middle-aged, but ugly, who had a very pretty sort of a Chambermaid with her, about eighteen Years of Age. Out of Curiosity I went to take a nearer View, when the Lady opening the Door herself, alighted in great haste; and as I was preparing to give her my Hand, she took no Notice of me, but gave her Chambermaid such a Box o' th' Ear, as set her a crying.

His comical Adventure with a Lady and her Chambermaid.

As I was young at that time, and had not Courage enough to surmount certain Impressions, I was melted into Pity for the poor Girl, and espousing her Quatrel, more perhaps than I ought, I went to her, and told her how sorry I was to see her so ill-treated, and that she

1683.  deserv'd much rather to be waited on herself, than to pay such a disagreeable Attendance on others.

THE Girl cry'd incessantly, without answering' one Word; and I was continuing my Discourse to her when the Mistress, who went strait out of the Coach into the Inn, came to the Door, and whether she was provok'd that her Maid did not follow her, or whether it was because she had seen me talking to her, she came out again like a Fury, struck the poor Creature several Blows, pull'd off her Coif, and dragg'd her by the Hair of her Head about the Court. It was painful to me to see her thus abus'd, and perhaps too on my Account; however, I pleas'd myself with the Thought, that this Instance of Severity wou'd turn to my Advantage.

I soon found an Opportunity to chat with her in private; and ask'd her, *Whence she came?* She said, *from Paris.* I told her, that it was not convenient for her to stay longer in the Service of that old Hag; and, after I had made her an Offer to carry her back to her Kindred, I added, that if she wou'd trust herself with me, I wou'd take as much Care of her as of myself. She made me no Answer, but by a Smile gave me to understand that she did not reject my Offers.

THIS

TH
media
whom
privat
thing
be an
was fe
what
ture,
from
I was
where
Mistr
was
ving
lock'
I was
made
I im
have

IN
what
the I
swor
she
affro
a N
pres
Wo
a G
to b
bein

1683.

THIS being all I wanted, I went immediately to find out the Inn-keeper, whom I order'd to carry the Girl to a private Chamber, and to give her something to eat; telling him, that I wou'd be answerable. Soon after this, Supper was serv'd, but being impatient to know what wou'd be the Issue of my Adventure, I soon made an End, and rose from Table long before it was uncover'd. I was hardly enter'd into the Room where I had left the Girl, but her jealous Mistress, who, suspecting something, was at my Heels without my perceiving it, pull'd the Door to her, double-lock'd it, and carry'd away the Key. I was dumb-founder'd at the Noise she made, but seeing a Bolt upon the Door, I immediately shot it; saying, *Since they have lock'd us in, we will bolt them out.*

IN the mean time, you may imagine what Rumors there were in the Inn; for the Lady made loud Exclamations, and swore by all the Saints in Paradise, that she wou'd have Satisfaction of me for affronting her. Tho' we heard what a Noise there was, it made little Impression upon me at first; but the young Woman telling me that her Master was a Gentleman of the Law, I did not like to be thus shut in with her, for fear of being prosecuted for a Rape.

I THERE-

1683.

I THEREFORE consider'd which way to make my Escape; and judging by the Height of the Window, that the two Sheets of the Bed ty'd together, wou'd let me down, I prepar'd to be gone, charging the Girl to keep her own Counsel, and to go to Bed, after she had put back the Bolt; and with an Assurance, that she shou'd soon hear from me, I bid her Good-night. I was no sooner at Liberty, but I went into the Chamber, where the two Merchants lay. The Servant-Maid of the Inn smil'd when she saw me, because she and every body in the House thought I had been engag'd elsewhere.

NEXT Morning, at Break of Day, came the Judge and Recorder with a great Train of Officers. The Lady, who had sent for them, rav'd like a Fury with Complaints against me, and with all the Bitterness of her Soul, demanded Justice; saying, I deserv'd more exemplary Punishment than she cou'd exprefs. Her Husband, who did not talk quite so fast, spoke only in Sentences, quoted abundance of Law and Scraps of *Latin*; and after a great many sorry Pleadings, mov'd that I might be apprehended, and prosecuted according to Law. The Information being drawn up, the Mistress gave the Judge the Key of the Chamber; saying,

1683.

ing, ' There, Sir, open that Door, and
 ' you'll find the honest Man in Bed
 ' with the Whore, my Maid ; I hope
 ' you will do me Justice.' Upon this,
 the Judge open'd the Door, and find-
 ing the Girl all alone in the Bed, he
 ask'd her where the Gentleman was that
 had spent the Night with her.

ABIGAIL, who was no Fool, an-
 swer'd very innocently, that she did not
 know what he meant ; that she had lain
 all Night alone ; and that if they wou'd
 not believe her, they need only search
 the Room, in which there were not so
 many Holes and Corners, but they
 might soon be examin'd.

THE Judge himself having peep'd in-
 to every Place, and finding nothing, went
 out, and told the Lady, that she had
 sent for him to no Purpose ; and that
 he had found nobody in the Chamber
 but a young Woman in Bed. The La-
 dy, who had waited all the while at the
 Door for fear, no doubt, lest I shou'd
 make my Escape, made Answer in a
 great Rage ; *What, Sir ! (said she) have*
you found nothing ? I warrant you, I'll
find him (continu'd she) tho' he were a
Conjurer : Come on. I saw him with my
own Eyes enter the Room, turn'd the Lock
upon him immediately, and have not parted
with the Key out of my Hands one Moment
since.

H A V I N G

1683.

HAVING said this, she enter'd the Room like a mad Woman, taking the Judge by the Hand, and calling her Maid by a thousand hard Names, besides loading her with as many Imprecations. There was no Probability that the Hubbub wou'd end soon; but *Abigail*, who was by this time half dress'd, said to her, *What, Madam, a'n't you satisfy'd with beating me as long as you pleas'd, but you must disgrace me too?* And then, turning to the Judge, Sir, continued she, *I appeal to you for Justice; pray order this wicked Woman to pay me the rest of my Wages, and let her not think any more of my Service; for I wou'd sooner die than live with this Devil any longer.*

I STARTED into the Room that very Moment, and taking up the Cause, I said to the Judge, 'Tis I, Sir, that am the innocent Author of all this Tongue-clack; for being touch'd to the Quick to see the poor Maid abus'd without any Reason, I was willing to know who she was; and being acquainted with her Family, I bid the Landlord take Care of her, and offer'd to pay for what she had: And this is the mighty Offence for which Sir and Madam here have given you the Trouble to come; but to a very wrong Purpose, as you yourself are sensible. The Master and Mistress were going to reply, but

I rang

1683.



I rang them such a Peal in their Ears, that they did not think fit to go on. The Merchants who were present, interfer'd in the Matter, and seconded what I had said. In fine, the whole Controversy amounting to just nothing at all, the Judge and his Men sneak'd away, the Gentleman and his Lady rode off in their Coach, and the Merchants, *Abigail*, and my self set out for *Provence*: We travel'd together as far as *Orange*, where the Merchants having some Business cut out for a few Days, we parted after a thousand Compliments on both Sides.

He carries
off the Maid
to *Provence*.

As I was desirous of concealing my Adventure from the Public, (for notwithstanding the Passion I began to entertain for her, I should have been ashamed to have been seen with her in *Provence*) I dress'd her in the Habit of a Cadet, and, taking her up behind me, I carry'd her to *Aix*, where I alighted at the Inn of *Martegues*: Next Day I walk'd with her thro' the Town, and nobody so much as suspected the Cheat.

Puts her in
the Disguise
of a Cadet.

THE Day following, I gave her what Money was necessary to bear her Expences till my Return, and charg'd her, above all Things, to be secret in her Disguise, which she promis'd me, and embracing me with Tears in her Eyes,

Leaves her
at *Aix* in
charge with
the Landlady
of the
Inn.

1683. Eyes, she seemed in so much Affliction at my Departure, that my Heart perfectly ak'd for her; however, I flung out of her Arms, and, after recommending her to the Hostess, whom I knew full well, and who mistrusted nothing of the Matter, I set out for *Toulon*, and *St. Marcel*.

Returns,
and finds
her in Wo-
man's Ap-
parel.

I LONG'D so much to return to my Cadet, that I dispatch'd my Affairs as soon as possible, so that I had done all my Business in less than three Weeks; after which I rode Post to *Aix*, where I thought it an Age before I arrived, but when I came, I found all my Mystery of Gallantry unravell'd, for my pretended Cadet whose Tears had so affected me, had been false to me, and her Misbehaviour was the Talk of the Town. Some devout People whom I had no great Respect for, at that Time, being inform'd of the Fact, had obliged her to wear the Habit of her Sex. Being provok'd to the last Degree, and ashamed to see all my Craft discover'd, I rav'd heartily against those that had been the Authors of my Mortification.

AT the first Sallies of my Indignation, I was going to make the Girl feel the Weight of my Resentment; but the next Moment I considered the Levity of her Sex, and resolved to treat her only with Contempt. Yet I was
not

1683.

Sends her
home to her
own Relations.

not willing to abandon her intirely, and tho' I thought her very unworthy of my Notice, yet I left her in the Hands of a Person I cou'd confide in, with what was necessary to carry her home to her Relations.

AFTER what has been said, I hope that no young Officers or other Persons, who take the Trouble to read these Memoirs, will imagine that I put this Transaction down as one of the best Things I ever did. When a Person writes with Reflection, and at my Age, they have quite different Sentiments of Adventures of this Kind, from what they had when they were young. It was with Regret, that I told it; but I promis'd that I would relate my Bad Deeds as well as my Good ones, and I cannot go from my Word.

He returns
to Paris.

HAVING no more Business to do at *Provence*, I returned to *Paris*, and, going to Court, I found there two Mandarins of *Siam*, accompany'd by M. *le Vacher* Priest of the Missions establish'd at *Siam*. These Mandarins declar'd they were sent by the Ministers of the King of *Siam*, to know what was become of an Embassy the King their Master had sent, some Time ago, to the Court of *France*: And that hearing, when they came near our Coasts, that the Ship which carry'd the Ambassador

An Embassy to the
French
Court, from
the King of
Siam, cast
away.

1684.  bassador and Presents from the King of Siam, had the Misfortune to suffer a Wreck; they proceeded directly to Court, according to their Orders.

AT several Conferences which they had with the Ministers, they gave them to understand, pursuant to their Instructions, that the King their Master had protected the Christians for a long Time, that he was glad to hear mention made of their Religion, that he himself was not very averse to the embracing of it, that he had ordered his Ambassadors to talk about it with his Majesty, and, in fine, they added, that their Master was so well dispos'd, that he would infallibly turn Christian, if the King did but propose it to him by an Embassy.

UPON these Arguments which they magnified far beyond the Truth, and in which M. *le Vacher* did not fail to second them, his Majesty being influenced partly by the Advances made by the King of Siam, and his Fondness to make his Court to him, and partly by the Consideration that it was not impossible but that he might embrace Christianity; if he was invited to it by a splendid Embassy, and being moreover fully sensible of the Advantage which would redound to Religion from
a Convert

Conv
many
was de
Amba
Chau
King
upon a
mission
for be
and a
which
Adva
know
princi
trous
King
with
pable
of th
men
Bu
happ
ful a
upon
ing
for t
with
dina
for
and
inst

1683.

Convert whose Example might make many others so, he consented to what was desired of him, and appointed for his Ambassador to *Siam*, the Chevalier *de Chaumont* a Captain of his Navy. The King could not easily have pitched upon a Person more worthy of a Commission that seemed of such Importance; for besides the Advantages of his Birth, and a thousand other personal Qualities, which distinguish'd him to very great Advantage, he was a Man of such well known Piety, that an Embassy whose principal View was to convert an idolatrous King, and perhaps his whole Kingdom, could not have been trusted with a Person whose Virtues were capable of giving a more exalted Idea of the Religion which he was to recommend.

The French King appoints an Embassy to *Siam* to convert the King

BUT in Case the Ambassador should happen to die in the Course of so painful a Voyage, and the Embassy devolve upon some Person incapable of discharging it, the Abbot *de Choisi* was named for the second Man in the Commission, with the Title of Ambassador in Ordinary, supposing it should be necessary for him to make a long Stay at *Siam*, and that the King should desire to be instructed.

M. DE

1684.

An Offer
made to the
Count to be
of the Re-
tinue.

M. DE CHAUMONT, to add the greater State to the Embassy, proposed to have an honourable Retinue; and having cast his Eyes upon a set Number of young Gentlemen that were to accompany him, he proposed the Voyage to me, which was an Offer that I did not reject; but I made him Answer, that as it was to be a Voyage almost to the World's End, I could not engage with him till I had consulted my Family and Friends, with whom I would go that Moment to confer, and that if they thought proper, I would do myself the Honour and Pleasure to attend him.

THAT very Day I imparted the Proposal which had been made me to the Cardinal *De Janson* and to M. *Bontems*, who were both for my accepting it, and thought it would be so far from prejudicing my Fortune, that it was the most infallible Way of making my Court, because the King had this Embassy very much at Heart; and that as to my own Part, I should run no Hazard in leaving the Kingdom in a Time of Tranquility, when for want of Action, I could have very small Hopes of advancing myself. Upon this Advice I went to wait on M. *De Chaumont*, and told him how glad I should be to accompany him, and promised him accordingly. He was in Rapture

Which he
accepts.

Raptu
entere
acquai
having
Curios
of the
the Fu
sented

TH
also co
of my
Rouille
two C
had
wante
of the
had o
to me
would
Livre
far sh
desire
to tak
ing m
in D
Japan
that
the
the f
out i
for
out
desig

1684.

Rapture upon the Engagements I entered into with him; and when I acquainted him that for the Sake of having an Opportunity to gratify my Curiosity, I should be glad to be Major of the Embassy, and to perform all the Functions of that Office, he consented to it very willingly.

1685.

THE Count *De Luc*, whom I had also consulted, and who had approved of my Voyage, spoke of it to Madame *Rouillet*. This Lady happened to have two Chests of very fine Coral that she had brought from *Provence*, and wanted to dispose of. The Gentlemen of the *India* Company, to whom she had offered them to Sale, did not care to meddle with them, and therefore would not give more than Five hundred Livres for both the Chests, which was far short of their Value; whereupon she desired the Count to prevail with me to take them along with me, empowering me to lay out the Purchase-Money in Damask Stuffs, *China* Cabinets, *Japan* Ware, and other Rarities of that Country. I voluntarily undertook the Commission, and having settled the few Affairs I had at *Paris*, I set out in the Beginning of the Year 1685. for *Brest*, where I had Orders to fit out the two Ships which the King had designed for the Embassy.

ABOUT

1685.

The Em-
barkment
of the Em-
bassy.

ABOUT the latter End of *February*, when all Things were ready, M. De *Chaumont*, and the Abbot *De Choisi*, set out for *Brest*, where they embarked on board a Ship called the *Bird*, commanded by M. *De Vaudricour*, and with them the King of *Siam*'s Ambassadors, six Jesuits, viz. the Fathers *de Fontenay*, *Tachard*, *Gerbillon*, *Le Comte*, *Bouvet*, and *Visdelou*, whom the King sent to *Cbina* in Quality of Mathematicians, four Missionaries, of which Number were Messieurs *Le Vacher* and *Du Chailas*, and a numerous Retinue of young Gentlemen, who went as Volunteers, either out of Curiosity, or, as we have said, with a View to do a Pleasure to the Ambassador.

ALL the rest, who could not get Room in the *Bird*, were admitted on board a Frigate called the *Malignant*, which carried Thirty-three Guns, was commanded by M. *Joyeux*, Lieutenant at the Port of *Brest*, and had made several Voyages to the *Indies*. All being embarked, we weighed Anchor in the Night-time, and next Morning, which was *Saturday* the third of *March*, after the Crews had shouted several times GOD SAVE THE KING, we put off and steered for the Cape of *Good Hope*.

WE pass'd the Line very happily without being too much incommoded with

with the Heats, and in a little Time we began to discover Stars that we had never seen before. Those called the *Croisade*, which are four in Number, were the first that we observed, after which we saw the White Cloud, which is placed near the *Antarctic Pole*. By help of excellent Telescopes, which our Mathematicians used, we perceived that white Cloud to be nothing but a Constellation of a Multitude of small Stars there. At length, after we had been three Months at Sea, we arrived at the Cape of *Good Hope*, so near the Calculation made by our Pilots, that there was a Mistake only of fifteen Leagues, which is an Error of no Consequence in so long a Run.

THE Cape of *Good Hope*, which is about one long Chain of Mountains, extends from N. to S. and runs out a pretty Way into the Sea. On one Side of those Mountains there is a vast Bay which opens a great Way into the Country, and has very good Coasting on the Side of the Mountains, but is very dangerous every where else. We did not dare to proceed in the Night, but the next Day, tho' the Wind was contrary, we thought there was no Danger in entring it.

WE were scarce got into the Middle of the Road when the Wind stopped

Description
of the Cape
of *Good Hope*
and *Table*
Bay.

1685.

The Count
is sent ashore
to treat with
the Dutch
Governor.

all on a sudden, but while we were driving by the Currents towards the Rocks, so that we were not above a Musquet Shot from them, it returned very luckily and rescued us from the Danger. This was the most perillous Day we had met with yet. At last, after a great deal of Fatigue, we anchored One hundred fifty Paces from the Fort built there by the *Dutch*, in which they keep a strong Garison. Two Sloops quickly came out to see who we were, and the next Day I was sent ashore to compliment the Governor, and to treat with him concerning the Salute, and for Refreshments, of which the Crew had great need. I found this Officer in the Fort just mentioned, which is a regular Pentagon very well fortified. I was received with a world of Civility; all that I desired was granted; it was agreed that the Salute should be Gun for Gun, and that we should be furnished with all manner of Refreshments for our Money.

I RETURNED to give an Account of my Negotiations to the Ambassador, who was so charmed with the good Behaviour of the *Dutch*, that he caused the Sloops to put off, and we all thought of nothing but to go ashore and

and recreate ourselves after the Fatigue
of so tedious a Navigation.

THE Jesuits were the first that paid
their Respects to the Governor, who
loaded them with Presents. The
Fathers told him, that while they were
on shore, they should be very glad to em-
ploy their Time in making Observations
that might be of use to the Publick,
and for which they could not have
that Leisure and Conveniency else-
where. He gave them Leave in a
very genteel manner, and for their
better Accommodation lodged them in
a magnificent Pavillion built in the
India Company's Garden. There they
made various useful Observations, and
settled the Longitude from the Cape,
which till then had only been guessed
at by the Pilots, a Way of Computa-
tion which is very suspicious, and liable
to many Errors.

The Gover-
nor's Civili-
ties to the
French Ma-
thematici-
ans.

WHILE the Mathematicians were
making their Observations, I was very
glad to make mine also, and to inform
myself exactly of the State of the
Country, of which, as far as I was
able to discover during the little Stay
I made there, an Account follows.

Forbin's Ac-
count of this
Country.

THE Dutch, who are Masters of this
Country, bought it of the chief Inhabi-
tants, who, for a little Quantity of
Tobacco and Brandy, consented to

1685.

retire farther within Land. Here is a very fine Place for Ships to take in Water, and though the Country is of itself dry and barren, yet the *Dutch* have a Garden here, which, without Dispute, is one of the largest and finest in the World. 'Tis walled round, and abounds with Herbs of all Sorts, and the choicest Fruits of *Europe* and the *Indies*.

As this Cape is a Sort of Warehouse for all Ships that trade betwixt *Europe* and the *Indies*, which call in here to refit and to take in Refreshments, 'tis stock'd in Abundance with every Thing that is desirable. About twelve Leagues from the Cape, the *Dutch* have settled a Colony of *French* Hugonots, and given them Lands to cultivate, which they have accordingly planted with Vines, sown with Corn, and which, in short, produce all the Commodities necessary for Life in Abundance.

THE Climate is very temperate, and the Latitude Thirty-five. The Natives are *Caffres* (or *Hottentots*) not quite so black as those of *Guiney*; well shaped, and very active, but in other respects there is not a more unpolite and brutish People under the Sun. They speak inarticulately, so that no body could ever learn their Language. However they would be capable enough of Education,

1685.

cation, for the *Dutch* take several of them, when they are young, make use of them at first for Interpreters, and afterwards they prove sensible Men.

THEY live without Religion, feed upon all Sorts of Insects that they find in the Fields, and go naked both the Men and the Women, with only a Sheep's Skin over their Shoulders, that breeds Vermin, which they eat without loathing.

ALL the Ornament worn by the Women, is the Guts of Sheep fresh killed, which they roll about their Arms and Legs. They are very nimble Racers, for they besmear their Bodies with the Fat of the Sheep, which makes them loathsome to the Eye, but renders them very supple, and fit for all manner of Leaping. They lie all together, higgledy - piggledy, without Distinction of Sexes, in sorry Cottages, and couple with one another indifferently like Beasts, without any Regard to Consanguinity.

A WEEK after we had been at the Cape of *Good Hope*, and taken in sufficient Recruit, we sailed for the Streight of *Sonde*, which is formed by the Isles of *Java* and *Sumatra*. The contrary Winds drove us to the Southward, and separated us from the Frigate, so that we lost Sight of her. We had

They sail
from the
Cape.

1685. a View of the Southern Coasts, which are unknown to our Pilots. The Soil of it seemed to us to be reddish. We had no mind to go near it, and the Wind coming about more favourable, we changed our Course, and discover'd the Isle of *Java*.

To the
Streight of
Sonde.

HAVING no Pilots aboard us that knew the *Sonde* very well, we resolv'd to sail according to those excellent Charts we had from M. de *Louvois*; and after having coasted along the Island of *Java* for some Time with a small Sail, we discovered the Streight, and enter'd it very safely.

DURING this Voyage, all the Crew that happened to be upon Deck, saw a Phenomenon we had never seen before, which furnished our Natural Philosophers with Matter of Debate for several Hours. Though the Sky was very serene, yet we heard a great Clap of Thunder like the Discharge of a Cannon, which was attended with Lightning that hissed terribly as it fell into the Sea Two hundred Paces from the Ship, and continued hissing in the Water to such a Degree, that it made it bubble and foam for a great while.

Fromthence
to *Bantam*.

AFTER about two Months sail we arriv'd the fifteenth of *August* in Sight of *Bantam*, where, though we would fain have gone farther, yet the Num

ber

1685.



ber of our Sick, the Necessities of the rest of the Crew, but, above all, the Want of a Pilot that knew the Way to *Siam*, obliged us to stop. We lay all Night upon our Anchors, and next Morning I had Orders to go ashore to compliment the King on the Part of the Ambassador, and to desire him to let us have the necessary Refreshments.

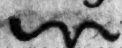
THE Lieutenant of the Fort, to whom I was introduced, denied me every Thing I asked; and notwithstanding all my Importunity, I could never get Audience of the King. I remonstrated that I wanted to speak with the *Dutch* Governor, but I was answered, that he was sick, and had seen no body for a long time. At last, after having put off all my Requests with sorry Excuses, he told me in plain Terms, that I should be in the Wrong to stay there for Refreshments of any Kind, it being the King's absolute Will and Pleasure, that no Strangers should set Foot in his Country.

Where they are denied Refreshments by the *Dutch*.

As I was insisting on the Unkindness of this Refusal, and charging it home upon the *Dutch*, the Officer gave me to understand, that the State of Affairs made it by no means convenient for the King to admit Foreigners into his Country; that his Subjects,

The Count's Expostulation with the *Dutch* Governor upon it.

1685.



who were ripe for a Rebellion, only waited for Succours which they expected from *France* and *England*, to declare themselves openly; and that whatever I might think fit to say of the Embassy to *Siam*, I should find it a hard Matter to persuade them, that our Ship, which was anchoring so near *Bantam*, was not come with a Design to animate the *Javans*, and to give them Hopes that the rest of the Squadron was not far behind: That as to the *Dutch*, I could not in Justice blame them for the Denial that was given me; that as they only served the King in Quality of auxiliary Troops, they could do no less than obey him; that besides, if we were actually going to *Siam*, as I had assured him we were, we had nothing to do but to proceed to *Batavia*, which was but twelve Leagues off; and that the Civilities we should meet with there from the GENERAL of the *India Company*, would convince us, that the Unkindness shewed to us here, was an Act of mere Necessity.

ALL that he had said of the Disgust of those People, and of the Necessity of shutting out Foreigners, was true to a Tittle; but he did not tell me that the said Disgust, as well as the Severity I had been complaining of, proceeded from

from
I shal
It
ago
Fatig
Crow
Son.
So
tion,
or v
Sover
to rep
this
with
Lord
havin
fures
seem
clare
Rega
H
his G
Stand
was f
Men
enou
gun,
the
King
had
tated
join
vinco

from the Tyranny of the *Dutch*, which I shall explain to you in a few Words.

It was not above five or six Years ago that Sultan AGUN, tired with the Fatigues of Government, resigned the Crown in Favour of Sultan *Agui* his Son.

The Reasons of it explained by the Count.

SOME Years after his said Resignation, whether he repented of that Step, or whether his Son abused the Sovereign Authority, he had a View to replace himself on the Throne. To this End he had secret Conferences with the PANGRANS, who are the great Lords of the Kingdom; and after having maturely concerted all his Measures with them, and every Thing seemed to favour his Design, he declared himself openly, and resumed the Regal Ornaments.

History of some Revolutions in the Kingdom of *Bantam*.

His Subjects had been so happy under his Government, that they came to his Standard with Joy, so that his Army was soon increased to Thirty thousand Men; and thinking himself strong enough to complete what he had begun, he went and besieged his Son in the Fortress of *Bantam*. The young King being abandoned by every body, had recourse to the *Dutch*, who hesitated for a while whether they should join with either Party; but being convinced at length, that they could not

1685.

but be Gainers by throwing the Weight into either Scale, they espoused the Prince's Party, and entred the Country. The JAVANS, assisted by some MACASSARS, would fain have hindered their Landing, but after a brisk Engagement, the *Javans* were defeated by the *Dutch*, who made themselves Masters of the Citadel, took the young King into their Protection, and not long after surprized the Father in an Ambush, and made him their Prisoner. He was so dear to his Subjects, that the *Dutch* confined him very close, but the Son being not so well beloved, nor so dangerous, had a little more Liberty, and they let him have the exterior Part of Royalty, while in his Name they made the Subjects groan under Oppression.

THEIR Government was too odious not to be detested, and therefore being in constant Fear of a Revolt, they always pretended the King's Orders for keeping out Foreigners, whose Entrance into the Harbour might prove favourable to Insurrections. This was the Policy, in Pursuance of which they refused Refreshments to us, and many before us.

I HAD nothing to do now but to return in my Sloop, and give an Account of the ill Success of my Negotiation.

1685.

tion. I was scarce out at Sea, but I espy'd a Vessel, which looked so inconsiderable at a Distance, that I made up to her, and found it was our Frigate, which having had better Winds in her Passage than we, had lain four Days at Anchor under a little Island behind which, ourselves anchored immediately. After having expressed our mutual Joy in finding one another again, I learn'd from M. Joyeux and all the rest of the Crew, that the *Dutch* had served them much in the same manner as they had used us, and that upon the Repulse they met with, they would have sailed for *Batavia* three Days ago, only they were willing to stay in Expectation of hearing from us.

We both went aboard the Ambassador's Ship together, where the Pleasure we had of seeing one another, made us amends for the Repulse we had met with from the *Dutch*. Next Day the Wind seeming favourable, and all Entrance being denied us on the Coast of *Bantam*, we weighed Anchor and steer'd for *Batavia*. Though 'tis but twelve Leagues from *Bantam*, as has been already said, yet for want of an understanding Pilot, we founded it all the Way, and were two Days and a half in the Passage. At last we entered the Road, where, by reason of Sand Banks

1685.

Their Ar-
rival at Ba-
tavia.

Description
of it.

and Rocks, which cross the Coast in a thousand Places, we were a hundred Times in Danger of being lost.

BATAVIA is the Capital City of the *Dutch* Nation in the *Indies*, whose Power here is formidable, for they commonly keep in Pay five or six thousand Men of Regular Troops, composed of different Nations.

THE Citadel, which lies near the Middle of the Road, is built upon Piles of Wood, and consists of four Bastions, encompassed with a Ditch full of fresh Water. The Town is well built, all the Houses are white, after the manner of *Holland*; and among the numberless Inhabitants, there are a great many *French* Hugonots and Catholicks who live there for the Sake of Trade.

The great
Power of the
General of
the States
India Comp.

THE General of the *India* Company who resides here, has the Command over all the *Dutch Indies*, and no King has a Court more numerous and splendid. He regulates all the Affairs of his Nation with a Council, yet he is not obliged to submit to their Deliberations, and he may act by his own Authority in Defiance of any of their Resolutions, but then he remains chargeable with the Event, and must answer for it. The Embassies of all the *Indian* Princes are to apply to him, and he sends Ambassadors to them in the Name of

of his
at his
from
Com
Years
for Li
unpar
Comp

A s
went
to hin
ing b
condu
Arriv
was v
Arms
was in
with

Th
(which
Gener
heard
his H
tion w
for th
tam.
me in
upon
would
imagi
that A
he is
Guns

of his Nation. He makes Peace and War at his own Pleasure, without Controul from any Power whatsoever. His Commission is only given him for three Years, but he is commonly continued for Life; so that 'tis very rare, not to say unparallell'd, for a General of the *India* Company to be turned out of his Post.

As soon as we had cast Anchor, I went ashore to make my Compliment to him, and was received at my landing by an Officer of the Port, who conducted me to the Palace. At my Arrival, the common Guard, which was very numerous, stood under their Arms in two Lines, through which I was introduced into a Gallery adorned with the finest Porcellane of *Japan*.

THERE I found his EXCELLENCY (which is the Title always given to the General of the *India* Company) who heard me all the Time standing with his Hat down to the Ground, a Reception which made me ample Reparation for the Repulse I had suffered at *Bantam*. The only Language he spoke to me in was *French*. We could not agree upon the Salute to be Gun for Gun, as I would have had it; therefore I cannot imagine how Father *Tachart* came by that Account in his Narrative, where he is so particular as to tell how many Guns were discharged; for 'tis very certain,

The Count's
Visit to him.

1685.



certain, that we agreed there should be no Salute on either Side, As for the rest, I had nothing to do but to ask a Favour, and it was granted, the General having assured me, at the very first, in expresse Terms, that there was nothing but he should be ready to perform, to shew the Ambassador the Veneration he had for his Character, and for his Person in particular.

The General's Presents to the French Ambassador, &c.

I PRESENTLY returned on board full of Joy, and gave an Account of all that had pass'd. Soon after my Return, the General sent a Person to visit M. de Chaumont to make him an Offer of 12 Baskets full of Herbs, and all manner of Fruits, and the next Moment fresh Envoys came to present him with two Beeves and some Sheep. The General continued thus to welcome him every now and then by the chief Men of the City, and to send him all manner of Refreshments every Day, for his own Table, and for the Companies of both our Ships.

WE spent eight intire Days at Batavia, where we received all the Civilities imaginable from the Officers, and before I came away, I sold the two Chests of Coral which I took Charge of at Paris. A Chinese Merchant who bought them, weighed my Coral, and gave me eight times the Weight in

Silver,

Silver
thou
to m
Pie
muc
bette
more
done
Liv
Fran
H
ment
skilfu
Sigm.
sail
eleve
pretty
Ship
Sail f
we di
board
Arms
the di
vent
the W
could
Stern
Work
Deck
quet
aboar
upon
her sh

1685.

Silver, amounting to the Sum of Six thousand Livres, which was told out to me in *Japan Money*, that is, *Little Pieces of Gold*. If I had not been so much in haste, I should have made a better Bargain, for it was really worth more; but after all, I thought I had done very well to get Six thousand Livres, for a Commodity, which in *France* would yield but Five hundred.

HAVING taken in all our Refreshments, and furnished ourselves with a skilful Pilot, we steered our Course for *Siam*. As the Wind was fair, we set sail early in the Morning. About eleven o'Clock at Night, when it was pretty dark, we perceived a large Ship coming towards us with all the Sail she could make. By her working we did not doubt but she designed to board us, upon which every Man took Arms. We fired a Gun at her, but she did not alter her Course. To prevent being boarded, we failed before the Wind, but notwithstanding all we could do, the Ship run foul of our Stern, and broke part of our carry'd Work. I was posted upon the Quarter-Deck, from whence I fired with Musquet Shot, but could see no body aboard, upon which we bore down upon her with main Force, and made her sheer off. Several of our Ship's Com-

1685. Company were for pursuing this Vessel, but the Ambassador being unwilling to permit it, we continued our Course, and by the Darkness of the Night, soon lost Sight of her.

THE Crew reason'd variously upon this Adventure. Some would have it to be a Fire-Ship which the *Dutch* had posted behind some Island to destroy the King's Ships, and to prevent the Embassy to *Siam*, which they did not like. Others imagined something else, but my Conjecture (which was confirmed afterwards at *Siam*) was, that this was a Ship whose Crew was most of them drunk, and that the rest being terrified by the Fire of our Gun, were crept under Deck, not a Man daring to shew his Head.

Their Arrival at *Siam*.

THIS Adventure excepted, which only alarmed us, we had a very peaceable Passage all the Way to the Bar of *Siam*, where we anchor'd the Twenty-third of *September*, about six Months after we left the Port of *Brest*.

THE Bar of *Siam* is nothing but a great Bank of Mud which is thrown up by a River whose Mouth is two Leagues off. The Water is so low at this Place, that at the highest Tides it never rises above twelve or thirteen Foot, which is the Reason that great Ships can go no farther.

As

1685.

As soon as we had cast Anchor, I set out with *M. le Vacher* to notify the Ambassador's Arrival in the Dominions of the King of *Siam*. We spent the Night in entering the River, which is one of the most considerable in the *Indies*, and is called *Menan*, i.e. *The Sea of Waters*. The Tide, which flows very high in this Country, being strong against us, we were obliged to lie by. As we were going up, we saw three or four little Houses of Canes covered with the Leaves of Palm, *M. le Vacher* told me that there lived the Governor of the Bar. We went ashore in our Canoe, and found three or four Fellows sitting on the bare Ground in one of those Houses, chewing the Cud like Oxen, without Shoes, Stockings, Hat, or any Thing at all to cover their Body but a Piece of Cloth to hide their Nakedness. Their House too look'd as poor as the Inhabitants, for I saw no Chairs in it, nor any manner of Furniture; upon which I enquired where the Governor was, and one of the Company said, *I am He*.

THIS first Scene very much sunk the Ideas I had form'd of *Siam*; nevertheless I had a keen Appetite, and asking for Food, the honest Governor made me a Present of some Rice, and when I desired

1685.

desired to know if he had nothing else to give me, he answered *Away*, which signifies *No*.

A Corre-
ction of the
Abbe de
Choisi's and
F. Tachard's
Account of
it.

The univer-
sal Misery
of the Coun-
try.

HAVING been thus regaled at our Arrival, I frankly own, that I have wonder'd more than once, how the Abbe de *Choisi* and Father *Tachard*, who made the same Voyage, and saw the same Things as I did, should both agree to give such pompous Ideas of the Kingdom of *Siam*, with so little Foundation. 'Tis true, that as they stay'd there but a few Months, and as it was the Interest of M. *CONSTANCE*, the chief Minister, to cast a Mist before their Eyes, for Reasons which I shall mention in their Place, there was nothing in this Kingdom capable of imposing on them but what was shew'd to them; though when all is said and done, they must have been strangely infatuated not to see the Misery of the whole Country, which is so visible go where you will, that it is impossible not to perceive it. Having said this, *en passant*, we return now to our Voyage.

WHEN the Tide served, we went aboard again, and proceeded in our Voyage up the River, where we sailed at least twelve Leagues without seeing either Castle or Village, except a few sorry Huts like those at the Bar, and

what

what made it still more unpleasant, the Rains fell; however we made the best of our Way, and by ten a Clock at Night arrived at *Bancock*.

THE Governor of this Place, who was a *Turk*, but cut a better Figure than he at the Bar, gave us a very indifferent Supper after the *Turkish* Mode, and treated us with Sherbet for our Drink; for my own Part I lik'd neither his Food nor his Liquor, but Patience was my only Remedy. Next Morning M. *le Vacher* took a *Balon*, which is one of that Country Gallies, and went directly to *Siam* to notify the Arrival of the *French* Ambassador at the Bar, while I returned in the Canoe on board our Ship; but before I went, I asked the Governor, if, for my Money, I might not have some Herbs, Fruit, and other Refreshments to carry on board, to which he answer'd *No*.

As our Company were impatient for my Return, as soon as ever they saw me coming at a great Distance, they call'd out to me to know if I brought any Refreshments with me, but I said I had brought nothing except the Bites of Gnats which had persecuted us all the Way.

AFTER we had lain upon our Anchors five or six Days without seeing any body, two Envoys came on board

1685.

board us from the King of *Siam*, with M. de L'ANO, Apostolical Vicar, and Bishop of *Metelopolis*, and the Abbé de LIONNE: These Envoys paid their Compliment to the Ambassador on the Part of the King of *Siam* and his chief Minitter M. CONSTANCE. Soon after this, Refreshments came to us, at first in small Quantities, but afterwards in great Abundance, so that we had plenty of Hens, Ducks, Calves, and all manner of *Indian* Fruits, but very few Herbs.

Preparation for the French Ambassador's publick Entry to *Siam*.

THE Court was a Fortnight in preparing for the Ambassador's publick Entry, which was order'd in the Manner following. On the Bank of the River were erected at proper Distances, several Houses of Canes lin'd with great painted Callicoes. As the King's Ships could not go up the River for want of Water to carry them over the Bar, Vessels were got ready to serve as Transports.

THE first Entrance into the River was without any Ceremony, only some Mandarins came to receive his Excellency, with Orders to accompany him. We were a Fortnight in our Passage from the Bar to *Joudia*, or *Odia*, the Capital City of the Kingdom.

HERE

HER
Mistak
They
pretend
of *Siam*
near a
after v
tis ver
had an
Imagin
has no
and th
so big
fourth
TH
all alo
the A
left th
carried
which
served
Day;
one N
next
broug
where
Canes
and v
till th
time
Manc
ticula
Incog

HERE I cannot help correcting a Mistake of our Writers of Travels. They tell us every now and then of a pretended City, they call it the Capital of *Siam*, which they make to be very near as big as *Paris*, and embellish after what manner they please. But 'tis very certain, that such a City never had any Existence but in their own Imagination, that the Kingdom of *Siam* has no other Capital but *Odia* or *Joudia*, and that as to the Size of it, 'tis hardly so big as our Towns in *France* of the fourth and fifth Rate.

1685.

A Mistake
of some Au-
thors about
Siam.

Portable
Houses for
the Ambaf-
sador's Re-
ception.

THE Houses that were built of Canes all along were portable, for as soon as the Ambassador and his Retinue had left them, they were taken up and carried forward, so that the Houses which served for Dinner one Day, served for the same Purpose the next Day; and those in which they lodg'd one Night, served for the same Use the next Night. This continual Motion brought us at last near the Capital, where we found a great House of Canes, which was not to be removed, and where the Ambassador was lodged till the Day of Audience. In the mean time he was visited by all the great Mandarins of the Kingdom, and particularly by M. *Constance*, but he came *Incog*, because of his Dignity and high Rank

1685.



Difficulties in settling the Ceremonial of his Audience.

Rank in the Kingdom, of which he was absolute Master.

THE first Thing treated of was the Ceremonial, during which there were great Debates after what manner the Letter from the King of *France* should be delivered to the King of *Siam*. The Ambassador was for giving it to the King with his own Hand, which was a Pretension directly incompatible with the Practice of the Kings of *Siam*; for, as according to them, the principal Mark of their Grandeur and Sovereign Power consists in being always raised higher than those who appear before them; and as 'tis for this Reason that they never grant Audience to Ambassadors but thro' a very high Window which looks into the Hall where they admit them, the Ambassador could not have reach'd the King's Hand without raising a Stage for the Purpose with several Steps, to which they made so many Objections as took us up several Days. At length, after a great many Jaunts backwards and forwards, in which I was generally employed in the Quality of Major, it was agreed, that upon the Day of Audience, the King's Letter should be put into a Cup of Gold, which should have a Foot of the same Metal three Feet and a half in Length, by the Help of which the

Am-

Ambassador might lift it up to the King's Window.

1685.

Description
of the Siamese
Gallies
called Balons.

UPON the Day of Audience, all the great Mandarins in their Balons, preceded by those of the King and Government, repaired to the Ambassador's House. These Balons, as I have already said, are small Gallies commonly used in this Kingdom, and there's a vast Number of them, otherwise there would be no going abroad, for the whole Country lies under Water six Months in the Year, which is owing partly to the Situation of the Lands, which lie extremely low, and partly to the Rains that fall almost incessantly at certain Season of the Year.

THESE Balons are form'd out of the Trunk of a Tree made hollow; some of them are so small, that they are scarce big enough for one Person. The biggest are not above four or five Foot wide at most, but they are very long, so that 'tis no extraordinary thing to find those that have above fourscore Men to row them, nay some have One hundred and twenty. The Oars they make use of are in the Shape of a shovel, half a Foot broad at the End, which is rounded, and a little above three Foot long. The Rowers are train'd to observe the Commands of a Guide who steers them, and 'tis surprizing

1685.



prizing with what Dexterity they obey him. Some of those Balons are very stately, representing often the Figures of Dragons, or some Sea-Monster; and those of the King are all over gilt. Out of the vast Number that brought Company to the Ambassador, there were few but what were very magnificent.

THE Mandarins having landed and paid their Compliments to his Excellency, we embark'd in the following Order. The King's Letter was put into a Balon and laid upon a high Throne. The Ambassador, the *Abbe de Choisi*, and their Retinue, placed themselves either in the King's Balons, or those of the State. The Mandarins returned to their own Balons; and in this Order we set out with the Sound of Trumpets and Drums; both Sides of the River, to the Place we were to go ashore at, being lin'd by infinite Numbers of Spectators, invited thither by the Novelty of the Sight, who, as the Balon sail'd by with the King's Letter, made their Obeisance to the very Ground.

Their Arrival at the Place of Audience.

WHEN we came within a certain Distance of the Palace, we went ashore, where a Sort of portable Stage was provided for the Ambassador, adorn'd with Crimson Velvet, and an Arm-

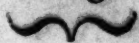
Chair

Chair

Chair
were
one f
for t
all t
Palac
whol

T
very
great
two
Ther
much
apart
Out o
where
painted
Groun
They
same
Kings
veral
of Au
with se
TH
Elbow
Foot,
The A
but his
the oth
ear, w
Carpet
which
VOL

1685.



Chair upon it, which was gilt. There were two other Stages not quite so fine, one for the Abbé *de Choisi*, and the other for the Apostolical Vicar. They were all three carry'd in this manner to the Palace, being accompany'd by the whole Train on Horseback.

THE first Place we enter'd, was a very spacious Court, in which stood a great Number of Elephants rang'd in two Lines, through which we pass'd. There we saw the white Elephant so much esteem'd by the *Siamese*, standing apart from the rest, for Distinction. Out of this Court we went into a second, where 500 or 600 Men with their Arms painted blue, were sitting on the bare Ground, like those we saw at the Bar. They are the Executioners, and at the same time the Foot-Guards of the Kings of *Siam*. After passing thro' several other Courts, we came to the Hall of Audience, which is a long Square with seven or eight Steps to ascend it.

The Ceremony of Audience,

THE Ambassador was plac'd in an Elbow Chair, holding the Cup by the Foot, in which was the King's Letter. The Abbé *de Choisi* was on his Right, but his Seat was lower, on a Stool. On the other Side was the Apostolical Vicar, whose Station was upon a Foot-Carpet laid there for the Purpose, which was neater than the great Carpet

1685.

with which the whole Floor was cover'd. All the Ambassador's Retinue sat in the same manner on the Ground cross-legg'd. We were charg'd above all things to be cautious of putting out our Feet, that being reckon'd at *Siam* the greatest Piece of ill Manners that can be. The Ambassador, the Abbé *de Choisi*, and the Apostolical Vicar, were posted all three in a Line facing the Throne, and we were all rank'd behind them in three Files. On the Left-hand were the great Mandarins, with those of the highest Quality by their Side, and so on successively, those of inferior Dignity, till they reach'd to the Hall Door.

WHEN every thing was ready, a great Drum was beat; at which Signal the Mandarins, who had nothing on but a Piece of Linen, which reach'd from the Waist to half of the Thigh, a sort of Muslin Waistcoat, and a Basket-Cap on their Heads in Form of a Pyramid, cover'd with Muslin, squatted down upon the Ground, leaning upon their Knees, and Elbows. The Posture of these Mandarins with their Caps seeming as if stuck in one another's A---ses, made every *Frenchman* laugh. The same Drum beat again several times, with certain Intervals between, and at the sixth Beat the

King

King
him
I
such
but
Inch
der
Hab
ing a
Gold
Mid
were
costl
of A
ture,
side
which
Horse
having
Rever
and w
stance
ter;
proach
sented
who,
for the
of the
enough
and to
the Wi
His
Questio

King open'd the Window, and shew'd himself.

HE had on a high-crown'd Hat, such as they wore formerly in *France*, but the Brim of it was scarce above an Inch broad; which Hat was ty'd under his Chin with a Silk Ribband. His Habit was after the *Persian* Fashion, being a Stuff of the Colour of Flame and Gold. He had a rich Scarf about his Middle with a Poniard; his Fingers were adorn'd with a great Number of costly Rings. He was about fifty Years of Age, a very thin Man, of low Stature, and no Beard, but on the Left-side of his Chin he had a Wart, from which sprouted two long Hairs like Horse-Hair. *M. de Chaumont*, after having saluted him with a profound Reverence, made his Harangues sitting, and with his Head cover'd. *M. Constance* supply'd the Place of Interpreter; after which the Ambassador approaching towards the Window, presented the Letter to this good King; who, whether the Ambassador did it for the Purpose, or whether the Foot of the Cup prov'd not to be long enough, was oblig'd to stoop very low, and to bend half of his Body out of the Window before he cou'd reach it.

HIS *Siamese* Majesty put several Questions to the Ambassador, inquir'd

1685. into the Health of the King and the Royal Family, and ask'd him some other Particulars concerning the Kingdom of *France*. Then the great Drum was beat, the King shut the Window, and the Mandarins stood up.

A Description
of the
Buildings
of *Siam*.

WHEN the Audience was over, the Ambassador was conducted to the House fitted up for his Residence, which was of Brick, but small and ill-built, yet the best in the whole City; for one must not expect to find Palaces in the Kingdom of *Siam*, as magnificent as ours in *France*. The King's indeed, is very large, but sordidly contriv'd, without Proportion, and of an odd Taste. All the rest of the Town, which is far from being neat, consists only of Houses of Timber or Canes, except one Street that has Two hundred Houses built of Brick, but then they are very small, and only one Story high. They are inhabited by the *Moors* and *Chinese*. As to the Pagods or Temples of their Idols, they are built of Brick like our Churches, but the Houses of the Talapoins or Monks of the Country, are only of Wood like the others.

BESIDES the public Audience, the Ambassador had several Conferences with the King; but the Ceremonial of this Country is extremely fatiguing, for never was there a private Interview, without

1685.

without a thousand Points to settle beforehand. In quality of Major, it was my Task to go between them, and to carry what was said on both Sides; and as to my own Share in the whole Negotiation, of which the King himself was Witness more than once, I had, I know not which to call it, the Happiness or the Misfortune to please him. Be this as it will, he was very desirous to retain me at his Court, and actually spoke about it to M. *Constance*.

The King's
Fondness
for our Au-
thor.

THIS Minister, who had his particular Views, and for Reasons that I shall mention in their Place, did not care I shou'd return to *France*, at least for a while, was infinitely pleas'd to find the King so affected, and improv'd the Opportunity which so fairly offer'd itself without his seeking it. He gave his Majesty to understand, that besides the Services which I was capable of doing him in his Dominions, it was convenient that, since he intended to send Ambassadors to *France* (for they were actually nominated, and every thing was ready for their Departure) some Person of the Ambassador's Retinue shou'd stay in the Kingdom, in the Nature of a Hostage, to be answerable for the Behaviour of the Court of *France* to the Ambassadors of *Siam*.

Encourag'd
by his Mi-
nister.

1685.

They threaten to keep him in the Country as a Hostage for the Behaviour of the French Court to the Ambassadors that were going from Siam.

THESE Arguments, whether good or bad, determin'd the King not to let me go, and M. *Constance* had Orders to signify his Majesty's Intentions to M. *de Chaumont*. The Ambassador told the Minister, that he was not Master of my Destiny, and that it was none of his Business to dispose of any one of the King's Officers, especially one of so distinguish'd a Family and Rank in the World, as the Chevalier *de Forbin*. But these Objections did not discourage M. *Constance*; he renew'd his Importunity, and after a great many Arguments urg'd *Pro* and *Con*, he declar'd to the Ambassador, that the King wou'd absolutely detain me in his Country, as a Hostage.

THIS Declaration astonish'd M. *de Chaumont*, who seeing no Prospect of my Liberty to go home, consulted with M. *Constance*, and the Abbé *de Choisi*, who was one at all their private Conferences, what Means they shou'd use to persuade me to acquiesce in his *Siamese* Majesty's Intentions. The Abbé *de Choisi* was pitch'd upon to propose the Thing to me, but I was not at all dispos'd to receive it. I told him, that setting aside the Dislike I shou'd have to stay behind in a Country so remote, and with a People whose Manners and Customs were so different from

from those of my native Country, I cou'd never think of sacrificing the small Beginnings which I had made of a Fortune in *France*, and the Hopes of farther Advancement, to stay at *Siam*, where the greatest Establishments I cou'd expect, were not equivalent to the little I had already.

THE Abbé de Choisi thought what I said very reasonable, and acknowledging how unjust it wou'd be to offer any Violence to me upon this Article, he propos'd my Objections to M. Constance; who taking him up very quick, said to him, *Sir, Let not the Chevalier de Forbin trouble himself about his Fortune, but leave that to me. He does not yet know this Country, and the Value of it; we'll make him High-Admiral, General of the King's Armies, and Governor of Bancoek, where a Citadel is going to be built forthwith for the Reception of the Troops that are to be sent hither by the King of France.*

ALL these fine Promises brought to me by the Abbé de Choisi, did not tempt me: I perfectly knew the miserable State of this Kingdom, and still persisted in my Design to return to *France*. M. de Chaumont was so press'd by the King, and much more by his Minister, that he cou'd not deny him what he so earnestly intreated; and

The
Tempta-
tions us'd
to prevail
with him
to stay.

1685. therefore, coming one Day in Person, I cannot refuse (said he) his Siamese Majesty's Demand of your Person; and advise you, as my particular Friend, to accept of the Offers he makes you; for whether you do or not, the Moment that the King absolutely insists upon it, you will be oblig'd to stay.

His Advancement to be the King of Siam's Admiral and General.

BEING provok'd to see how warmly I was press'd against my Inclination, I told him, that he argued to no Purpose; and that I wou'd never consent to stay at Siam, unless he laid his Commands upon me in the (*French*) King's Name. Agreed, (said he) I command you then, accordingly. Having now no other Remedy left, I acquiesc'd; but had the Precaution to demand an Order of him for it in Writing, which he very civilly granted me. Four Days after this, I was install'd Admiral and General of the King of Siam's Armies, and receiv'd the Sabre and Vest, the Ensigns of my new Dignity, in Presence of the Ambassador and all his Retinue, who came to wish me Joy.

WHILE M. Constance, who had his own Ends perpetually in View, was setting all those Springs at work to detain me at Siam, he left no Stone unturn'd to give the *French* a grand Idea of the Kingdom, by making continual Feasts, which were always so well order'd,

der'd
ing to
to sh
men,
sure,
King
with
as not
Silver
Valu
long
tribut
establ
King
sidera
this
perm
e'er
Ar
the f
Coun
here
Idols.
Tem
gilde
be ap
M. G
they
dily
touch
too h
with

der'd, that no Preparations were wanting to set them off. He also took care to shew the Ambassador and us *Frenchmen*, all the Riches of the Royal Treasure, which are truly worthy of a great King, and enough to make one in love with his Court; but he was so cunning as not to tell us, that this Heap of Gold, Silver, and precious Stones of immense Value had been rais'd by the Gifts of a long Race of Kings, who had all contributed to augment it; for it is an establish'd Custom at *Siam* to extol their Kings for nothing so much as the considerable Augmentation they make to this Treasure, which they are never permitted to touch, be their Necessities e'er so great.

The Treasure of the Kings of *Siam*.

AFTERWARDS he carry'd him to all the finest Pagods in the Town and Country. This is a Name they give here not only to the Temples of their Idols, but to the Idols themselves. The Temples are full of Images of Plaister, gilded with so much Art, that one wou'd be apt to think them Gold. And, indeed, M. *Constance* did not fail to hint that they were so; which was the more readily believ'd, because we cou'd not touch them, they being generally plac'd too high to be reach'd, or else inclos'd with Iron Grates, which are never

Their Pagods.

open'd,

1685. open'd, and must not be approach'd to within a certain Distance.

The Court's
magnifi-
cent Pre-
sents to the
King of
France.

THE Minister judging that the Magnificence of the Presents intended for the King and Court of *France* might contribute much to his Design, he drain'd the Kingdom for the best of every thing that it produc'd. Whoever does but read what Father *Tachard* and the Abbé *de Choisi* have writ upon this Head, may truly say, that he carry'd Things to Excess; since he not only exhausted *Siam*, but sent also to *China* and *Japan*, for what was most Rare and Curious, and was continually loading the King's Ships till they cou'd contain no more.

And to the
Ambassa-
dor and all
the *French-
men*.

IN a Word, that he might be in no body's Debt, every Man of us had some Present or other, so that there was not a Sailor but had a Taste of his Bounty. These were the Methods by which the Ambassador and all our Countrymen were bubbled by this crafty Minister, who always kept his main Design in View, and omitted nothing that might concur to the Success of it.

EVERY thing being ready for M. *de Chaumont's* Departure, he obtain'd his Audience of Leave. As I was not to go Home with him, and as I did not think fit to lay out the Six thousand

thou-
ceiv'
that
of t
Bill
Lad
laid
Com
an C
At l
the
stanc
and
Test
retur
It
coun
Const
Reas
to d
who
the
Villa
Ceph
Gov
did
nor
stirri
of a
lace
T
was
Prin

1685.

thousand Livres at *Siam*, which I receiv'd for Madam *Rouillet's* Coral, I put that Sum into the Hands of a Factor of the *Indies*, from whom I obtain'd a Bill of Exchange, which I sent to that Lady, excusing myself for not having laid out her Money according to her Commissions, because I had not found an Opportunity to do it to Advantage. At last when the Day was come for the Ambassador's Departure, M. *Constance* and I, went to see him aboard, and from thence after a great many Testimonies of mutual Friendship, we return'd to *Louvo*.

The Ambassador's Departure for his own Country.

It is now proper to give some Account of the Political Views of M. *Constance*; after which I will tell the Reasons why he so earnestly wish'd to detain me at *Siam*. This Minister, who was by Birth a Greek, and from the Son of a Vintner, at a little Village call'd *Custode* in the Isle of *Cephalonia*, was come to be absolute Governor of the Kingdom of *Siam*, did not raise himself to that Post, nor maintain himself in it, without stirring up the Envy and Hatred of all the Mandarins, and the Populace too.

An Account of the K. of *Siam's* Prime Minister.

His Rise.

The first Service he enter'd into, was that of the *Barkalon*, i. e. the Prime Minister, who lik'd him very

1685.

well; for his sweet and engaging Behaviour, and above all, his Genius for Business, which nothing cou'd embarrass, soon introduc'd him into the intire Confidence of his Master, who loaded him with Favours, and presented him to the King as a Person capable of doing him faithful Service.

His Ingratitude to his Predecessor that rais'd him.

THE Prince had not known him long, before he repos'd a Confidence in him too; but from a Principle of Ingratitude which can never be enough detested, the new Favourite hating to have a Competitor in the good Graces of his Prince, and making ill Use of the Credit he had already obtain'd with him, first render'd him jealous of the *Barkalon*, and soon after engag'd the King to get rid of a faithful Subject, who had always done him good Services. *M. Constance* having thus made his Benefactor the first Victim which he sacrificed to his Ambition, began to render himself odious to the whole Kingdom.

His great Power with the King,

THE Mandarins and all the Great Men being exasperated at a Proceeding which gave them Reason to fear it might be their own Turn next, held several Cabals against the new Minister, and hop'd to root him out of the King's Favour; but it was too late, for he work'd upon the Prince's Passion to such

such a degree, against those who had attempted to cross him in his Favour, that above Three hundred paid for it with their Lives. He afterwards made such an Improvement of his Fortune, and of his Master's Foibles, that what with his Extortion, and downright Violence, and what with Traffick, which he had engross'd all into his own Hands, he amass'd an immense Treasure.

And immense Wealth.

So many Outrages, which nevertheless he always colour'd over with a pretended View to the Publick Good, had set the whole Nation against him; but their Resentment was kept so secret, that not a Man durst declare it; for they hop'd that the King's old Age and crazy Constitution, would bring about a speedy Revolution.

The secret Discontents of the People.

CONSTANCE knew how ill-belov'd he was: He had too much Understanding, and was too sensible of the Injuries he had done them, to think that they cou'd soon forget them. Besides, no Man knew better than himself, what little Dependance there was upon the King's Life, whose weak Constitution was every Day declining. He also foresaw what he was to expect from a Revolution, and was fully convinc'd that he cou'd never save himself, but by the Establishment of some foreign

1685.

His Policy
to secure
himself by a
foreign
Power.

foreign Power in the Kingdom, to support and protect him.

THAT in short was the only Card he had to play, and the only thing he had in View. In order to attain to it, his Business in the first Place, was to persuade the King to admit Foreigners into his Dominions, and to trust them with the keeping of a Part of his Territories. *M. Constance* carried this Point with no great Difficulty, for the King paid such a Deference to every thing that the Minister propos'd to him, and the Minister so artfully display'd all the Advantages that wou'd redound from an Alliance with Foreigners, that this Prince gave an implicit Consent to every thing he ask'd: The great Difficulty that remain'd, was to determin what Prince to apply to.

The Reason
why he
would not
trust the
Neighbour-
ing Princes.

CONSTANCE, who only acted for his own Interest, cou'd not bear the Thoughts of applying to any Princes in the Neighbourhood; they being so notorious for Breach of Faith, that he had too great Reason to fear, they wou'd first enrich themselves with his Spoils, and then deliver him over to the Mandarins for Justice, or else make some Treaty, of which his Head wou'd be the Price.

THE

THE *English* and *Dutch* cou'd not be tempted to *Siam* with the Hopes of Gain, because it was a Country of no great Trade. For the same Reasons he could not prevail with himself to apply to the *Spaniards*, nor to the *Portuguese*; and in fine, when he saw there was no other Remedy, he thought the *French* would be the most easily deceiv'd. With this View he engag'd his Master to court an Alliance with the King of *France* by the Embassy, of which we made mention at first; and therefore when he had given it so particularly in Charge to the Ambassadors to insinuate, that their Master had some Inclination of embracing Christianity, which by the way, his *Siamese* Majesty never had a Thought of, the *Most Christian* King in his great Piety thought fit to concur to so good a Work, by sending Ambassadors in his turn to the King of *Siam*.

1685.

And why he courted the *French* more than any other *Euro-peans*.

CONSTANCE perceiving how well he had succeeded in one Part of his Project, consider'd how to make the remaining Part of it turn to his Advantage. The first Man to whom he open'd his Lips about it, was *M. de Chaumont*; he gave him to understand, that the *Dutch* had long wish'd for a Settlement at *Siam*, in hopes of enlarging their Trade; but that the King knowing the

1685.

the imperious Humour of that Nation, and fearing they might make themselves Masters of his Dominions, wou'd never hear the Mention of it; that however if the King of *France*, whose Faith was more to be rely'd on, was dispos'd to enter into a Treaty with his *Siamese* Majesty, he would engage that the Fortrefs of *Bancock*, a Place of Importance, and as it were the Key of the Kingdom, should be put into his Hands, provided he would send Troops thither, with Engineers, and all the Money necessary for beginning the Settlement.

The French Ministers not so fond of the Project as their Missionaries.

The Art of the King of *Siam's* Minister to delude the latter.

M. de Chaumont and the *Abbé de Choisy*, to whom this Matter was communicated, not thinking it feasible, would not undertake it. Father *Tachard* came into it without much Difficulty. His Eyes were immediately dazzled with the Advantages he thought the King would reap from this Alliance, Advantages which *Constance* set off at an extravagant Rate, far beyond the least Appearance of Truth. He was deluded in another respect by this crafty Minister, this occasional Hypocrite, who pretending a pious Zeal, as a Cloak for all his secret Practices, represented how much Religion wou'd be advanc'd, as well by the King of *Siam*, who he made him

him
Christ
the
the
French
wheed
blissh
M. C
Colleg
built
the cro
in the
for th
Religi
to neg
Hesita
his Ex
that h
it shou
de la
use his
FR
cret o
Father
min'd
Siamese
settled
nothin
his Pr
and hi
variou
manag
Functi

him believe would certainly embrace Christianity, as by the Protection which the Missionaries would be sure of in the Work of the Ministry from a French Garrison at *Bancock*: He was wheedled also by the considerable Establishment promised for the Jesuits by M. *Constance*, who engag'd that a College and an Observatory should be built for them at *Louvo*. In a Word, the credulous Father perceiving nothing in the whole Proposal, but what was for the Advantage of the King, of Religion, and his Society, undertook to negotiate the Affair without any Hesitation, and he was so sanguine in his Expectation of bringing it to pass, that he actually promis'd M. *Constance* it shou'd be done, admitting that Father *de la Chaize* would interfere in it, and use his Interest with the King.

1685.

FROM that Moment the whole Secret of the Embassy was reposed in Father *Tachard*, and he was determin'd to return to *France*, with the *Siamese* Ambassadors. Matters being settled thus far, *Constance* imagin'd that nothing cou'd be more prejudicial to his Project, than my Return to *France*; and his Reason for it was this: In the various Negotiations which I had manag'd with him, by Virtue of my Function, as Major of the Embassy, he

The Secret
why that
Minister
was against
Count For-
bin's Return
to *France*.

1685. he discovered in me that Openness, that Character of Frankness which render'd it impossible for me to dissemble, or to call Things by their wrong Names. Therefore he was apprehensive, that as I had no very great Notion of *Siam*, or of any Commerce that cou'd be settled there, which I had declared very frankly, though I did not, in the least, suspect his Design; he apprehended, I say, that when I came to *France*, I shou'd make the same Declaration as I had done at *Siam*, and that, by divulging my intire Opinion of this Country, I should, with a Word's speaking, dash that Project in Pieces, on the Success of which he founded all his Hopes.

AND, if I must speak the Truth, he was much in the right to be diffident of me upon this Article; for I shou'd certainly have told every Thing that I knew; having the Interest of my King too much at Heart, to give Way, by my Silence, to an Undertaking of very great Expence, and no Profit. The Minister fearing therefore that I shou'd mar all the Measures which he had hitherto conducted with so much Art, left no Stone un-turn'd to keep me at *Siam*, as I have already observed.

THESE that I have mention'd were the true Reasons of my being detain'd, tho'

tho' I
till th
I had
nister
Hint
related
partly
had w
Secret
of fut
easily
them
at *Sia*
W
I wen
the K
the F
for he
about
dom,
Being
for th
being
ation
very
at *Sia*
me sti
AL
a Cir
There
the w
rin w
he to
tho'

1685.

tho' I was an utter Stranger to them, till the Ambassadors were gone, when I had a long Conference with this Minister, in which he gave me the first Hint of a great Part of what I have related; and the rest I learnt afterwards, partly by private Discourse which I had with Persons who knew the whole Secret, and, partly by the Contingence of future Events, of which I cou'd easily trace the Spring, as fast as I saw them occur. I return now to my Life at *Siam*.

WHEN the Ambassadors were gone, I went with M. *Constance* to *Louvo*, the King of *Siam*'s Country Seat, and the Place of his ordinary Residence; for he goes to *Joudia* the Capital City, about Seven Leagues off, but very seldom, and on certain Days of Ceremony. Being introduced into the Palace here, for the first Time, I cou'd not help being extremely surprized at the Situation of the Mandarins. I was before very much concern'd to be left behind at *Siam*, but what I saw here, made me still more chagrin.

Description
of *Louvo*,
and the
Mandarins
there.

ALL the Mandarins were sitting in a Circle, upon Mats of small Osier. There was but one Lamp to illuminate the whole Court, and when a Mandarin wanted to read or write any Thing, he took a Piece of yellow Wax-Candle

Their dark
Court, and
pantry
Candle-
sticks.

1685. dle out of his Pocket, which he kindled at this Lamp, and then put it upon a Piece of Wood, which, turning to either Side upon a Hinge, serv'd for a Candlestick.

THIS Decoration, so different from what I ever saw at the Court of *France*, made me so curious as to ask M. *Constance* if all the Grandeur of the Mandarins consisted in what I then saw; to which he answered me in the Affirmative; and, perceiving that I was so confounded, that I had not a Word to say, he took me aside, and talking to me with more Freedom than ever he had done before, ‘Don’t be surpriz’d, *says he*, at what you now see. This, in good Truth, is a poor Kingdom; but, however, your Fortune shall not suffer by it: Leave that to me.’ And after this, being desirous to discover his whole Mind to me, we had a long Conversation, wherein he let me into all his Views, that amounted to the same which I just now mention’d. This Conduct of the Minister surpriz’d me altogether as much as the Misery of the Mandarins. For cou’d it be imagin’d, that one of his refined Politicks, wou’d have so freely open’d his Breast to a Man, whom he had so lately hindered from returning to his own Country,

try,
trust
I v
for t
never
King,
This
was n
did n
him t
I este
to be
there
ture;
not g
every
with
were
TH
be ex
as I
Four
for h
screen
nism
Broth
exemp
TH
to th
speak
talk t
they
Arms

1685.



The Count's Answer to the King when he ask'd him how he lik'd his Court.

try, because he was always afraid to trust to his Discretion?

I WENT to the Palace every Day, for two Months together, and cou'd never, but once, get a Sight of the King, but afterwards I saw him oftner. This Prince ask'd me one Day, if I was not very glad to stay at his Court? I did not think my self obliged to tell him the Truth, but made Answer, that I esteem'd it a very great Happiness to be in his Majesty's Service; yet there was not such a Falshood in Nature; for my Vexation that I cou'd not get back to *France*, increased at every turn, especially, when I saw with what Severity the smallest Faults were punish'd.

THE Person who causes Justice to be executed, is the King himself, who, as I have already said, has always Four Hundred Executioners with him, for his ordinary Guard. Nobody can screen himself from the severe Punishments he inflicts; for the Sons and Brothers of the Kings are no more exempt than other Men.

THEY commonly slit the Mouths to the very Ears, of such as don't speak enough, and sew up theirs who talk too much. For very trivial Faults, they cut off Mens Legs, burn their Arms with a red-hot Iron, strike them with

The Punishments inflicted on Criminals in *Siam*.

1685.

with a Sabre, over their Heads, or pull their Teeth out. A Man is condemn'd, for nothing at all almost, to the Bastinado, to carry a Cangue, or Yoke about his Neck, or to be exposed bare-headed to the scorching Heat of the Sun; and there's scarce a Subject living, but, at one Time or other, has had the Points of Canes thrust under his Nails to the very Root, or his Feet put in the *Cep* or Stocks, and other Punishments of the like Kind.

My Surprize to see the great Mandarins exposed to such severe Treatment, made me ask *M. Constance* if I had not Reason to expect the like Fare. He answered in the Negative, and that this Severity did not extend to Foreigners; but he told a Lye, for, as I heard afterwards, he himself was bastinado'd, while his Predecessor was in the Administration.

The Cheap-
ness of Pro-
visions.

To conclude, the King provided a very little House for me, where I had Thirty-six Slaves to attend me, and a Couple of Elephants; but the Men are so temperate in this Country, and Provisions so cheap, that my House-keeping cost me but Five *Sous* a Day. As for my own Part, I tabled with *M. Constance*. My House being but meanly furnish'd, Twelve Silver

Plates

1685.

Our Au-
thor's Fur-
niture and
Table.

Plates were added to it, and Two large Cups of the same Metal, but none of them very substantial, with Four Dozen of Napkins, and Two yellow Wax-Candles, which were allow'd me every Day. This was the whole Equipage, in short, of the *Great Admiral and General of the King's Army.*

WHEN the King went to take the Air in the Country, or to hunt the Elephant, he found Provision for all his Attendants. We were served at such Times with Rice and Ragous after the *Siamese* Mode, which went down well enough with the Natives of the Country, but no *Frenchman*, who was not used to that Sort of Cookery, cou'd fancy them. Indeed M. *Constance*, who was generally of the Retinue, took Care to have better Food provided; but when special Affairs detain'd him at Home, I had much ado to make a Meal on what was cook'd for the King.

THE King often did me the Honour, at Diversions of this Kind, to converse with me, and I answer'd him by the Mouth of the Interpreter who was allow'd me by M. *Constance*. As this Prince gave me many Testimonies of his good Will, I ventur'd sometimes to take Liberties which he conniv'd at; but

His Interest
with the
King.

1685. but would have cost another Man very dear. One Day when he was going to have one of his Domesticks chastis'd, for having forgot a Handkerchief, I, not knowing the Customs of the Country, and being ambitious to make use of my Favour at Court, to do the poor Man Service, ventur'd to beg a Pardon for him.

His Presumption upon it.

THE King, who was surpriz'd at my Presumption, was downright angry with me, insomuch that M. *Constance*, who was present, waxed pale, and was afraid I shou'd undergo a severe Punishment; but for my own Part, I had the Presence of Mind to tell the Prince, that the King of *France* my Master, when Mercy was begg'd for Criminals, was charm'd that he had an Opportunity of shewing his Moderation and Clemency; and that his Subjects, in Acknowledgment of those Acts of his Grace, serv'd him with the more Zeal and Affection, and were always ready to stake their Lives for a Prince whose Goodness render'd him so amiable. The King's Heart being melted by my Answer, he pardon'd the guilty Person, by saying that he wou'd follow the Example of the King of *France*; but he added, that tho' such Kindness was well bestow'd upon *French* Men, who are by Nature generous,

it

it wo
the u
to b
Pun

Th
the K
darins
my M
Consta

to ta
greatl
and in
that I
done,

In
me, th
that v
ight i
diverte

stories,
seemed
that a
being a
One Da

lephan
f all
ally
agnifi

when
by all
my M
Troop
making
VOL.

it wou'd be dangerous to shew it to the ungrateful *Siamese*, who were not to be restrained but by the severest Punishments.

THIS Adventure made a Noise in the Kingdom, and surprized the Mandarins, who expected I shou'd have my Mouth sewed up, for my Rashness; *Constance* also admonish'd me in private to take Heed for the Future, and greatly blamed me for being so pert and imprudent; but I made Answer, that I did not repent of what I had done, since it had so well succeeded.

IN short, it was so far from hurting me, that I observed, the King, from that very Day, took the more Delight in conversing with me; for I diverted him by telling a thousand Stories, after my Manner, which he seem'd to be pleas'd with. 'Tis true that a little Matter wou'd do it, he being a stupid and very ignorant Prince. One Day when he was hunting a young Elephant, he ask'd me what I thought of all those Preparations, which had really something in them that was magnificent. 'Sire, said I to him, when I see your Majesty, follow'd by all this Train, methinks I behold my Master, at the Head of his Troops, giving his Orders, and making Dispositions in a Day of Battle.

The Author's Comparison of the King to Lewis XIV.

1685.



‘Battle.’ This Answer, as I guess’d before-hand, pleas’d him hugely. For I knew, that he was so fond of nothing in the World, as to be compared to LOUIS LE GRAND.

The Splendor of the King when he goes abroad.

AND, to speak the Truth, this, which was only a Comparison between the outward Grandeur and Magnificence of the two Princes, was not in all respects unjust, there being few Sights in the World finer than when the King of *Siam* goes abroad in public. For, tho’ the Kingdom is poor and one sees no Token of Grandeur in any Part of it; yet, when the King who lives a recluse Life in the midst of his Palace, without the Admission of any Body to him, not even of his most intimate Confidants, to whom he never speaks, but thro’ a Window when, I say, this Prince appears public, he shines in all the Pomptuousness to the Majesty of a Great King.

A great Inundation here once a Year.

THE Time that he shews himself the greatest Splendor is when he goes every Year upon the River, to command the Waters to retire. I have already said, more than once, that the whole Kingdom is overflow’d six Months in the Year: The chief Cause of it is the Melting of the Snow upon the Mountains of *Tartary*: But when

the Winter returns, and the Thaw ceases, the Waters begin by Degrees to abate, and leaving the Country dry, the Siamese take that Time to gather in their Harvest of Rice, which grows here in greater Plenty than in any other Country in the World.

Its plentiful Harvest.

At this Season, after the Waters begin visibly to be diminish'd, the King goes abroad for the Ceremony I am speaking of. He appears upon a great Throne, all shining with Gold, plac'd in the Middle of a stately Galley. Upon this Occasion, he is follow'd by a Crowd of great and little Mandarins assembled from all the Provinces, each in magnificent Galleys, accompany'd with a Multitude of others; and, with his Attendance, he goes to a certain Part of the River, where he strikes the Water with a Sabre, and commands it to retire. When they return from this Solemnity, there is a considerable Steward for the Galley which comes back first to the Palace. Nothing is so pretty as this Struggle, and to see the various Arts of the nimble Galleys get the Start of one another. To return to our Hunting. After the Elephant was taken, the King continued his Discourse with me; and endeavour'd to convince me what a want of Understanding those Animals

The Annual Ceremony of the King's commanding the Water to retire.

Instances of the Cunning of Elephants.

1685.

seem to be endow'd with. ' The Beast
 ' that I now ride on, says the Prince
 ' may be brought as an Instance of it
 ' Not long ago, there was a *Corna* of
 ' Groom that used to make him fast
 ' by letting him have but half of the
 ' Food which was his usual Allowance
 ' This Animal, which had no other
 ' Way of complaining, but by its
 ' Cries, made such a horrid Noise that
 ' was heard all over the Palace. Being
 ' at a great Loss to think why he cry'd
 ' so much, at last, I mistrusted the
 ' Cause, and plac'd a new *Corna* to
 ' take Care of him, who being more
 ' honest, and giving him his whole
 ' Measure of Rice, without robbing
 ' him of a Grain, the Elephant parted
 ' it into two Parcels with his Trunk
 ' and when he had eat just one half
 ' he cry'd out again, plainly hinting
 ' by it to those who came to see what
 ' was the Matter with him, how un-
 ' faithful the former *Corna* was to him
 ' who confess'd his Crime, and was
 ' by my Orders severely chastised.

THE Prince also told me several
 other Passages upon this Head, which
 I shou'd have hardly believed, if they
 had come from any Body else. But
 these that follow are Facts which I
 saw with my own Eyes. When
 Elephants are rutting, they grow o-

rageo

rageous, so that, to pacify them, their Keepers are obliged to put a Female along with them, especially when they go to be water'd; at which time the Female goes before, with a Man riding upon her, who sounds a Sort of Horn, to warn People to be upon their Guard, and to retire out of the Way.

AN Elephant that they were thus leading to Water at Rutting-time, broke loose, and ran into the Midst of the River, roaring and making every Body fly out of his Way. I took Horse and follow'd to see what was become of him. I found the Corna's Wife running with her young Child to the Brink of the River, where she reproach'd the Creature, as it were, in these Terms. *You want my Husband's Leg to be cut off, do you: For you know that's the common Punishment of the Cornas when they let their Elephants escape; Well then, since my Husband is to die, there's my Child, so, come and kill it.* When she had said this, she laid the Child down, and went her Way. The Child began to cry, upon which the Elephant, seeming to be mov'd with Pity, leap'd out of the Water, took the Infant in his Trunk, and carry'd it to the House, where it lay quiet.

1685.  UPON another Day, I saw another Elephant, that was going to be water'd, which tossing his Trunk from one Side to the other, as it went along the Streets, carry'd it so near to the Face of a Taylor, that he prick'd him with his Needle to make him keep off. When the Creature came back from the River, he had a Mind to have t'other Fling at the Taylor, who prick'd him again, very gently; upon which, the Animal spouted upon the poor Taylor, in an Instant, a Pail-full of dirty Water, which he had brought in his Trunk, to be revenged of him. This done, the Elephant, seeing his Man forsous'd, triumph'd over him, in his Way, as one Man does when he has outwitted another.

An Elephant's Triumph over a Taylor.

THESE Beasts are as useful to the *Siamese* as if they were Domestic Servants, especially in the Care they take of their young Children; for they snatch them up in their Trunks when they cry, and carry them to some Place where they lull them asleep, and when the Mother wants to have them, she demands them of the Elephant, who goes and brings them to her. THE King continued to give me fresh Marks of his Good-Will towards me Day after Day, and admitted me

more
him.
Hunt
Day
sician
ing;
again
who
Deity
touch
mov'
darins
shoul
that
enoug
Arm
Surge
know
T
me by
that
dolge
that K
tho'
visible
they c
a Veil
as tot
Bleedi
was a
being
Kings
it, are
mor

more and more into Intimacy with him. One Day as he return'd from Hunting, he was taken ill, and next Day grew worse, upon which the Physicians were call'd, who advis'd Bleeding; but there was some Objection against this Remedy, because the *Siamefe*, who look upon their King as a sort of Deity, never presume so far as to touch him. When the Affair was mov'd in Council, one of the Mandarins propos'd, that a great Curtain should be drawn before the King, and that a Slit might be made in it wide enough for his Majesty to put his Arm through it, by which means the Surgeon might bleed him, and not know it was the King.

1685.

The high Opinion which the *Siamefe* conceive of their King.

THIS ridiculous Hint did not please me by any means, and presuming upon that Freedom with which I was indulged, of speaking my Mind, I said, that Kings are like Suns, whose Light, tho' obscur'd by Clouds, is always visible; that do what they wou'd, they cou'd never be able to cast such a Veil over the Majesty of the Prince, as totally to eclipse it; but that if Bleeding was absolutely necessary, there was a *French* Surgeon at Court, who being a Native of a Country where Kings and Princes, whenever they want it, are blooded without any scruple;

The Difficulty of letting him Blood, upon that Hypothesis, solv'd by our Author.

1685.

they need only send for him, and I wou'd engage that his Majesty would not repent of the Confidence he should think fit to place in him. The King lik'd my Advice; but he recover'd his Health, and had no Occasion to take it.

A Mistake
corrected a-
bout the
Siamese
Pagods.

MUCH about that Time, an unforeseen Accident happen'd, which discover'd an Affair, wherein M. *Constance* had grossly impos'd upon M. *de Chaumont* and his Retinue. I took Notice, that while he was displaying the Riches of *Siam* to him, he took great Care to shew them the finest Pagods in the Kingdom, and that he affirm'd they were all of solid Gold. Among those Statues there was one like a Colossus, fifteen or sixteen Foot high, which he made them believe was of the same Metal. Father *Tachard* and the Abbé *de Choisy*, were deceiv'd in it as well as the rest of our Countrymen, and they believ'd it to be such a certain Matter of Fact, that they have put it down in their History. By Misfortune the Roof of the Chapel, wherein this Statue was erected, fell in and dash'd the Pagod to pieces, which prov'd to be only of Plaster gilt. The Imposture was discover'd, but the Ambassadors were far enough off; I cou'd not help rallying M. *Con-*

stance

stance
found
So
I had
build
be de
that th
and e
Amba
Model
the K
kept a
Fort,
Men
Creolia
to tho
Father
Mother
Garison
the Ch
I was
tiny id.
A P
Author
Mafs,
son ins
thus ha
men
havin
in the
to ha
this T
you.

stance so much upon this Head, that I found it made him uneasy. 1685.

Soon after this, M. Constance and I had Orders to go to *Bancock*, to build a new Fort there, which was to be deliver'd to the *French* Soldiers that the King of *Siam* had sent for, and expected by the Return of the Ambassadors. We there drew the Model of a Pentagon. As *Bancock* is the Key of the Country, the King kept a Garrison there in a little square Fort, of two Companies of Forty Men each, form'd of *Portuguese-Creolians*, which is a Name they give to those born in the *Indies*, whose Father is a *Portuguese*, and whose Mother is a *Yaponese* Christian. This Garrison hearing that I was arriv'd with the Character of a General, and that I was to be their Commander, mutiny'd.

A Fort order'd to be built at *Bancock* for a *French* Garrison.

A PRIEST of their Nation was the Author of it; who had no sooner said Mass, but assuming the Air of a Person inspir'd, turn'd to the People, and thus harangu'd them; 'Dear Countrymen, said he, the *Portuguese* Nation having always had the Predominancy in the *Indies*, it wou'd be a Disgrace to have it said, that a *Frenchman* at this Time, pretends to lord it over you. March out then with Courage,

A Mutiny of *Portuguese*.

1685.

‘ and suffer not such an Affront. Fear
 ‘ nothing; God will bless you as he
 ‘ has always done hitherto; mean
 ‘ time receive his Benediction; which
 ‘ in his Name I now give.’ There
 wanted nothing more to put them all
 in Motion.

WHILE *Constance* and I were em-
 ploy’d in the Disposition of the Work-
 men to begin the Ditches of the Fort,
 a *Portuguese* Colonel came with News
 to *Constance*, that his Soldiers had re-
 bell’d: The Minister asking the Rea-
 son of it, the Colonel reply’d, it was
 because they wou’d not obey a *French*
 Officer.

AT these Words I advanc’d up to
 one of the Bastions, and saw a Com-
 pany of Soldiers with their Muskets
 shoulder’d, marching directly towards
 the Fort. I acquainted M. *Constance*
 of it, and taking him aside; ‘ This
 ‘ Officer, said I to him, is certainly
 ‘ an Accomplice with the Rebels, be-
 ‘ cause he stay’d till they were actually
 ‘ on the March, before he came to
 ‘ give you Notice of it. They have
 ‘ a Design upon your Person as well
 ‘ as mine. The first thing I’ll do, shall
 ‘ be to seize this Colonel, whom I’ll
 ‘ oblige to send his Soldiers back again,
 ‘ and if he resist, I’ll kill him on the
 ‘ Spot.’ Then drawing my Sword, I

ran

ran
 with
 and
 to h
 throu
 Rebe

CO

very
 fallie
 deal o
 facing
 above
 deman
 Defian
 They
 wou’d
 their
 wante
 assure
 the C
 of one

TH
 when
 Comr
 what
 hearin
 with
 of the
 laid
 Sword
 ‘ are
 ‘ any
 ‘ Pro

1685.

ran at the *Portuguese*, disarm'd him with as much Ease as I wou'd a Child, and holding the Point of my Sword to his Breast, I threaten'd to run him through, if he did not call out to the Rebels to return to their Quarters.

CONSTANCE acquitted himself very well upon this Occasion; he sallied out of the Fort with a great deal of Resolution and Intrepidity, and facing the Mutineers, who were not above ten Paces from the Gate, he demanded of them, with a noble Air of Defiance, what they would be at? They answer'd One and All, that they wou'd not have the *Frenchman* to be their Commander. The Minister, who wanted neither Sense nor Courage, assured them that I was indeed to have the Command of the *Siamese*, but not of one *Portuguese*.

THIS Answer seem'd to pacify them, when one of the Company seeing his Comrades on the one Hand uncertain what to do, and on the other Hand hearing the Colonel calling out to them with all his Strength from the Top of the Bastion, to obey M. *Constance*, he laid his Hand upon the Hilt of his Sword, 'To what purpose, said he, 'are all these Arguments? have we 'any Reason to depend upon his 'Promises?' *Constance*, who saw him-

The Mutineers
pacify'd.

1685.

self in danger of having his Throat cut the next Moment, rush'd upon the Villain, took away his Sword, and after having sweeten'd his Comrades with good Words, sent them Home.

As this Attempt might have been attended with dangerous Consequences, if it had gone off with Impunity, the Colonel was apprehended, as were also the Soldiers and Officers, who had enter'd into the Conspiracy; and by Order of M. *Constance*, I call'd a Council of War, which in truth was very oddly regulated; but we were in a Country where none had ever been assembled before; however, we condemn'd the Soldier who had laid his Hand upon the Hilt of his Sword, to have his Hand cut off. Two others, who were convicted of having been the Heads of the Conspiracy, were sentenc'd to Death; some of the Officers were banish'd, and the rest of the Soldiers condemn'd to the Gallies: But before they were sent thither, they were chain'd two and two together, like our Galley Slaves, and oblig'd to work on the Fortifications. This Execution being over, and all the necessary Orders given for carrying on the Works, M. *Constance* and I return'd for *Louvo*.

And pu-
nished.

AT

AT our Arrival, M: *Constance* found himself involv'd in a troublesome Affair, which had like to have ruin'd him, and I can truly say, he wou'd never have got out of the Scrape, if it had not been for me. His Avarice for Gain, brought it upon him, and the Occasion was this: Before we set out for *Bancock*, he had a Mind to buy a Quantity of Sandal Wood, and apply'd for it to the *Sieur de Rouan*, a *French Hugonot*, who had sent for a great Quantity from the Isle of *Timor*, and made considerable Profit by some Parcels of it which he had already sold. *Constance* was desirous to take the rest off his Hands; but he wanted it at a low Price, to which the Merchant would never hearken; whereupon a Misunderstanding ensued, the Minister sought to pick a Quarrel with him, and by virtue of his Authority, he caus'd him to be arrested and clapp'd into Irons.

The Minister's Oppression of the French Merchant.

AT that very Time we set out for *Bancock*. During our Absence, the Factor of the *French Eastern Company* being inform'd of the *Sieur de Rouan's* Trouble, and resolv'd to have Satisfaction for the Affront he said had been put on his Country, went to *Louvo* and set up the white Flag opposite to the Palace. The King being

Satisfaction demanded for it.

sur-

1685.

surpriz'd at the Novelty of it, sent a Mandarin to know the Cause of it. The Factor said, he was come to demand Justice for the Wrong done to his Nation: That a *Frenchman* had been put in Irons, who had been guilty of no Crime; that he demanded Reparation for it, and that otherwise he must beseech his Majesty to give leave to him, and every *Frenchman* in the Kingdom, to depart it.

THE King, who knew not how far his Minister had a Hand in it, sent to tell the Factor that he might return to his House, and that when M. *Constance* and I were come back, he would inquire into the Affair, and cause Justice to be done. This Prince, especially ever since the Embassy, was very fond of the *French*, ready to protect them, and sorry whenever they left his Kingdom.

WE were scarce got to *Louvo*, when M. *Constance* was made acquainted with the Factor's Proceeding, upon which, without Loss of Time, he went to the Palace, thinking by one Word to overthrow all that had been alledg'd against him; but he found himself mistaken, for the incens'd King gave him hard Words, and threaten'd to have him punish'd, if he did not clear himself thoroughly.

The King calls his Minister to account for it.

CON

CONSTANCE answer'd in few Words, ' That he was so far from a Thought of using the *French* Nation ill, that there were no People in the Kingdom for whom he had so much Respect; that he intreated his Majesty to appeal for a Testimony of it to me, who being both by my Birth and Employments, far above that Factor, it was very likely that I should have complain'd to his Majesty, if there had been Occasion; but that he hop'd it would not be long before I came in to bear Witness to his Innocence, and to certify to his Majesty how cautious he always had been of doing any thing which might give Offence to the *French* Nation.

The Minister appeals for his Character to our Author.

M. CONSTANCE, who went directly from the Palace in quest of me, had no sooner found me out, but he said, ' Sir, you have now an Opportunity of doing me substantial Service. The Factor of the *French* Company has complain'd against me for the Imprisonment of the *Sieur de Rouan*; who you know as well as I, tho' by Birth a *Frenchman*, yet he is a Hugonot, and that being therefore oblig'd to leave *France*, he spent several Years in the Service of the *English*, and that he does not belong

to

1685.

to the *French Company*, nor ever did: Notwithstanding this, the Factor protects him with all his Power; and tho' he is not ignorant that the *Sieur de Rouan* is become a perfect *Englishman*, not only by his Departure from *France*, but by the Religion which he professes, yet he declares for him with a high Hand, and is for joining him to the Body of that Nation which he has so solemnly renounc'd. No doubt, you are sensible of the Injustice of this Procedure: I hope you will go with me to the King to justify me, and that you will serve me upon this Occasion, as I would serve you, were you in my Case.

BEFORE M. *Constance* left me, the King sent for me; upon which, I went forthwith to the Palace, where I found the whole Council silently waiting the Issue of this Affair. There was not one of the Mandarins but wish'd for the Ruin of the Minister, which the greatest Part of them reckon'd unavoidable; and they were the more confident of it, because the Complainant being a *Frenchman*, they did not doubt but I wou'd support the Factor's Plea. But they were disappointed in their Expectations, for I justify'd M. *Constance* to the full. After having extol'd his

Zeal

Zeal for
sented,
been pu
as a M
the Kin
from hi
had kno
intereste
who bel
France.

it upon
I added
Gratitudo
tection
and begg
him, th
not fail

My
Constance, v
that it a
turning
me, Cho
I am sa
to the M
what ha
about m
thousand
ring me
the signa

I repr
to put a
was conv
man's Ir

Zeal for his Majesty's Service, I represented, that the *Frenchman* who had been punish'd, ought not to be deem'd as a Member of that Nation, because the King my Master had banish'd him from his Dominions; and if the Factor had known it, surely he wou'd not have interest'd himself so warmly for a Man who belong'd to the *English*, and not to *France*. I declar'd that I wou'd take it upon myself to satisfy the Factor. I added, that I cou'd not express my Gratitude to his Majesty for the Protection he vouchsafed to our Nation, and begg'd him to continue it; assuring him, that the King my Master wou'd not fail to acknowledge it.

1685.

The Author's Vindication of him to the King and Council.

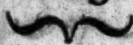
My Testimonial in Favour of *Constance*, was so effectual with the King, that it appeas'd him in an Instant; for turning towards me, he graciously told me, *Cboca di nacna*, i. e. 'Tis enough, *I am satisfy'd*. I hasten'd immediately to the Minister, to acquaint him with what had pass'd; for which he hung about my Neck, and embrac'd me a thousand and a thousand times; assuring me, that he wou'd never forget the signal Service I had done him.

The King's Pardon of the Minister.

I represented to him, that in order to put a final Issue to this Affair, it was convenient to knock off the *Frenchman's* Irons, to set him at full Liberty, and

The French Merchant set at Liberty.

1685.



and to restore his Cargo of Sandal-Wood to him, praying him withal, for the future, to let the *French* have a free Trade over all his Dominions ; and adding, that, upon this Condition, I wou'd easily mollify the Company's Factor. *Constance* promis'd, and perform'd what I desir'd of him, so that the Affair ended without any ill Consequence.

The Ingratitude of *Constance* to our Author.

AFTER having done *M. Constance* such important Service, I might well expect to find him a sure Friend at all times. Yet this same Service was one of the principal Causes of all the Mischiefs he endeavour'd to do me hereafter.

His natural Temper.

CONSTANCE was naturally very jealous and mistrustful. He cast an evil Eye at first upon the King's Goodness towards me ; and wish'd from his Heart, that the Prince had not indulg'd me with such a Liberty of saying what I pleas'd ; yet all this prov'd no more than a slight Alarm to him. But when he saw, that only one Word of mine was sufficient to extricate him out of great Trouble, he began to be afraid of me in good Earnest ; and considering with himself, that some Day or other perhaps, I might ruin him with as much as Ease as I had protected him, he bethought himself seriously,

His Jealousy of our Author

riously,
Man w
far adv
therefo
it cost

WH
Ways a
tion, h
it by a
King w
Prince
that he
nity of
is almo
of *Fra*
means a
ledge,
the san
for m
him to
made
follows.

THE
and cor
Court-y
were ad
dred Pa
King w
dy to th
Manda
march'
for abo
Masters

riously,

riously, which way he shou'd blast a Man who he imagin'd was already too far advanc'd in the King's Favour; and therefore resolv'd to ruin me, whatever it cost him.

1685.

WHILE he was musing about the Ways and Means to effect his Resolution, he had Reason to be confirm'd in it by a new Favour with which the King was pleas'd to honour me. This Prince order'd him to acquaint me, that he had nominated me to the Dignity of *Opra sac di son Craam*, which is almost tantamount to that of Marshal of France. This barbarous Name means a Divinity which has all Knowledge, and all Experience for War; at the same time he appointed the Day for my Reception, and commanded him to take care that every thing was made ready. The Ceremony was as follows.

A new Dignity confer'd on the Count.

THE Mandarin came to my House, and conducted me from thence to the Court-yard of the Palace. When we were advanc'd as far as about one hundred Paces from the Window where the King was, I fell prostrate with my Body to the Ground, as did all the great Mandarins who were with me. We march'd upon our Elbows and Knees for about fifty Paces, preceded by two Masters of the Ceremonies in the same Posture.

The Ceremony of his Installment.

1685.

Posture. When we were come to a certain Distance from the Place where we set out, we all together made a second Obeisance, which was by rising on our Knees, joining our Hands over our Heads, and striking the Earth with our Foreheads. All this was perform'd with a profound Silence; and, in fine, when we arriv'd under the King's Window, we made our third Prostration; at which time the Prince sent me some *Betel*, and pronounc'd two Words; which were as much as to say, *I receive you in my Service.*

The *Betel*.
Nut describ'd.

THE *Betel*, which the King gives upon this Occasion, is one of the most singular Favours that he can confer upon any Subject. 'Tis a kind of Fruit almost like an Acorn, with a green Rind, full of small Fibres and insipid Liquor. They quarter it, and mix it with Lime made of Shells reduc'd to a Powder, and then wrap it up in a Leaf resembling that of Ivy. The *Siamese* take a great Pleasure in chewing it, and think 'tis very wholesome.

More of the
above Ceremony.

THE Ceremony of my Installment concluded much in the same manner as it began: We return'd in the same Posture upon our Elbows and Knees, making three Reverences as we went back, the King standing all the time at the Window, and keeping his Eye upon

us

us to the very Place from whence we started.

1685.
We were no sooner come thither, but a Master of the Ceremonies gave me the *Bouffette*, with its Case, and a red Box to put them in. This *Bouffette* is a sort of little Cabinet of Gold and Silver laid on very thin, neatly engrav'd with several Figures of Dragons represented on the Outside. In this Cabinet are two little Cups of Gold, which are very thin likewise, one for the *Betel*, and the other to hold the Leaves to put it in. There is also a Gold Case to put the Lime in, a small kind of Spoon of the same Metal, to apply the Lime to the *Betel*, and a little Knife with a Gold Haft to cut the Nut.

When all was over, the Mandarins, who accompany'd me, paid me a very short Compliment according to Custom, bowing their Heads, with their Hands join'd upon their Breasts, and then re-conducted me to my own Habitation. This Ceremony ended, the King being dispos'd to add one Favour to another, sent me two Pieces of *India* Stuffs with Gold Flowers, which were large enough to make me two rich Suits.

These last Marks of the King's Good-will to me, having, as I observ'd, rais'd the Jealousy of M. *Constance* to a more violent Pitch than ever, he, without

1685.

The Mini-
ster's Envy
of the
Count, and
his Plot to
poison him.

without farther Scruple, resolv'd to leave no Stone unturn'd to get rid of me. As he saw it in vain for him to pretend any longer to disparage me in the King's Esteem, he resolv'd at first to poison me; but I had notice of it from a Friend, which determin'd me to eat by myself.

Tho' this was enough to make him mistrust that I had at least some Hint of his Design, yet it did not alter his Purpose; for one Day when I had an Ague, not knowing my Indisposition, he sent me some Milk curdled, of which he knew I was not a little fond; tho' if I had been ever so well, I shou'd have been far from touching it, after what I had been told. I happen'd unawares to leave it where my Slaves cou'd come at it, so that four of 'em eat it, and dy'd upon the Spot. I spoke of this Affair to the Bishop of Meletopolis, who told me, that he knew no Remedy for me, but to put my Trust in God, and be always on my Guard.

Another to
remove him
from the
Court.

CONSTANCE having miscarry'd in this first Attempt, contriv'd a Project to remove me at least from the Court; and the State of Affairs soon furnish'd him with an Opportunity to effect it. But being resolv'd not only to remove me, but to pursue me to Destruction, his Brain, which was always teeming with

Expe-

Expedie
Method
the way.
last I sh
late the
Advanta

ONE
with ab
jects, ha
of the
some ti
At his
the Kin
kindly
a Camp
Country
tion of
Men m

THI
cou'd r
spir'd
Malacc
to Dea
which t
them.

tans, t
Massac
Christi
alive.
the Co
that it
rence v

Expedients, suggested so many other Methods to him of getting me out of the way, that he did not doubt but at last I shou'd succumb. I shall now relate the Opportunity he had, and the Advantage he made of it.

ONE of the Princes of the *Macassars*, with about three hundred of his Subjects, having fled from the Oppression of the *Dutch*, had taken Refuge for some time in the Kingdom of *Siam*. At his Arrival, he address'd himself to the King, who pitying his Misfortune, kindly receiv'd him, and allotted him a *Camp* according to the Custom of the Country; that is to say, a certain Portion of Ground, to which he and his Men might retire.

THIS turbulent, ambitious *Macassar* cou'd not be long at quiet; but conspir'd with the Princes of *Cambodia*, *Malacca*, and *Chiampa*, to put the King to Death, and to seize the Kingdom, which they had already shar'd betwixt them. And as they were all *Mahometans*, they had agreed to make such a Massacre of the *Portuguese* and *Japonese* Christians, as not to leave one Man alive. M. *Constance* being inform'd of the Conspiracy, and of the very Day that it was to break out, had a Conference with the King, and issued the necessary

The *Macassars* fly to *Siam* for Refuge.

Their Plot with other Princes against the K. of *Siam*.

1686. cessary Orders for the Safety of the Kingdom.

The Count's
Repair to
his Post at
Bancock.

The Mo-
ney paid
him from
the Trea-
sury.

THERE cou'd not be a more fair Opportunity to remove me from Court. *Bancock*, of which I was Governor, was a Place of too great Importance to be abandon'd at such a perillous Juncture. I had Orders therefore, to repair thither forthwith, to see the Fortifications finish'd without Delay, to raise a new Levy of *Siamese* Soldiers, to the Number of Two thousand Men, and to discipline them *A-la-mode de France*.

To defray the Charge of my Post of General, *Constance* had Orders to pay me One hundred *Cati's*, which amount to Fifteen thousand *French Livres*; but I receiv'd no more than One thousand Crowns; the Minister pretending there was not Money enough at that time in the Treasury, so that he only gave me his Note, with an Assurance, that when certain Ships came home, which he expected every Day from *China*, I shou'd be paid the remaining Twelve thousand *Livres*.

THE King, that I might have all due Obedience and Respect paid me in my Government, gave me four of his Executioners, for the sake of doing Justice upon Criminals; which, however, extended no farther than a Bastinado or so, none but the King, generally

rally sp
fions,
Power

I se
tle of t
sent to
who kn
the Re
Rendez
well, an
ly for r
that wh
ter, I fo
Conspir
Road,
can't te
Plot be
the Day

WHE
great a
for Con
sooner h
sent Or
quefe wh
Gallies
order'd,
form'd
that the
from Ba
To f
without
of the H
quefe, w
VOL.

rally speaking, or upon certain Occasions, his Chief Minister, having a Power to pass Sentence of Death.

I SET out without knowing one Title of the Conspiracy, or why I was sent to my Government. *Constance*, who knew the very Day upon which the Rebels were to make their final Rendezvous, concerted his Measures so well, and timed my Departure so nicely for my falling into their Clutches, that when I knew nothing of the Matter, I found myself in the middle of the Conspirators, who met exactly in my Road, and yet, for what Reason I can't tell, suffer'd me to pass on, their Plot being to break out next Day, or the Day after at farthest.

The Minister's Plot for the Count's falling into the Hands of the *Massassars*.

WHEN I came to *Bancock*, I ran as great a Risque as I had escap'd before: for *Constance*, unknown to me, had no sooner heard of this Conspiracy, but he sent Orders for releasing those *Portuguese* who had been condemn'd to the Gallies by a Council of War; and had order'd, that Companies shou'd be form'd out of them as heretofore, and that their Officers shou'd be recall'd from Banishment.

Another of the Minister's Plots to sacrifice him to the *Portuguese*.

To send me hither in this Manner, without giving me the least Intimation of the Favour intended to the *Portuguese*, was delivering me, as it were,

1686. bound Hands and Feet to my Enemies. I perfectly understood the Meaning of it when I arriv'd, and found Men under Arms, whom I had but a little before put in Chains. But the Malice of *Constance* did me no Prejudice; I was upon my Guard in the very Beginning, and I manag'd the Soldiers and Officers so artfully, by feasting the latter, and by my obliging Carriage to the former, that I won the Hearts of both; and tho' they were Enemies to me when I left them before, I made them now so much my Friends, that they lov'd me for the future, sincerely and cordially.

Another of the Minister's Plots to embroil him with the *Macassars*.

M. CONSTANCE, tho' somewhat pleas'd he had remov'd me from Court, yet enrag'd that he had not yet carry'd his main Point, laid a new Trap for me, which he thought cou'd not misse, and which wou'd infallibly have succeeded, if the Lord had not visibly protected me; but at length I escap'd it so well, that I receiv'd no Damage from it as to my Person, tho' it put me to a great deal of Fatigue in other Respects, and occasion'd the Effusion of much Blood; as will appear from what I am going to relate.

THE Captain of a Galley of one of the *Macassars* Islands, who came to *Siam* to trade, was deeply engag'd in the Conspiracy, but finding it had miscarry'd, was

return'd

return'd
he saw
his Life
him.
the few
ed to
Conspi
the Off
and his
three M
in Peac

THE
Offer,
cept it
that it
time b
to ruin
Courier
King,
hinder t
declar'd
the who
the Co
have no
had onl
weaken

THE
when th
Chain,
an exac
and the
ain and
under A

return'd aboard, resolv'd to go home, if he saw an Opportunity, or else to sell his Life dearly, if they offer'd to force him. *M. Constance*, that he might have the fewer Enemies to deal with, wanted to separate him from the rest of the Conspirators, and therefore made him the Offer of a Pass; by means of which he and his Crew, to the Number of Fifty-three Men, might depart the Kingdom in Peace, and go where they pleas'd.

THE Captain was so fond of the Offer, that he made no Scruple to accept it. *M. Constance* perceiving then that it was in his Power at the same time both to divide the Enemy, and to ruin me without Remedy, sent a Courier to me, with Orders from the King, to hang out the Chain, and to hinder the Departure of the Ship. He declar'd to me, that the Captain and the whole Crew were Accomplices in the Conspiracy, and order'd me to have no Regard to their Pass, which had only been granted to deceive and weaken them.

THE Order signify'd likewise, that when the Galley was arriv'd at the Chain, I shou'd go aboard her, take an exact Inventory of all her Cargo, and then make a Seizure of the Captain and all the Crew, and detain them under Arrest, till fresh Orders: And,

1685.

by a separate Article, I was most expressly forbid to let any Soul know the Orders I had receiv'd, because certain Reasons of State demanded inviolable Secrecy upon this Head. Thus did he send me, as it were, to the Slaughter-house, by prescribing me, time after time, every Step that I shou'd take, to my utter Destruction.

I WAITED a long time for the Arrival of this Galley to the Chain, and amus'd myself in the mean while, by Exercising the Troops I had rais'd according to my Commission, which I executed indeed, without much Difficulty; for Levies of this Kind are made at *Siam* in a very little time, and with a vast deal of Ease, because the King being absolute Master of all his Subjects, the Governors in his Name take up whom they think fit; and the People, who are very tractable, march and obey without Grumbling.

I DIVIDED my new-rai'd Soldiers into Companies of fifty Men each, placing at the Head of each, a Captain, Lieutenant, an Ensign, two Serjeants, four Corporals, and four Lancepeshades. I took so much Care in Exercising them that with the Help of some *Portuguese* Soldiers, who understood the *Siam* Language, and of a *Frenchman* whom I made a Serjeant, they were in less

tha

than six Days able to mount and come off of the Guard, to fix the Centries, and to relieve them, as they do in France.

1685.

I HAVE already observ'd, that these People are so wonderfully tractable, that one may make them do what one will ; for these Two thousand Men perform'd their Exercise afterwards, and were as well disciplin'd as any Soldiers of the Guards.

I STILL expected the *Macassars*. As I had no Prison where I cou'd keep them, I caus'd one to be built joining to the Courtain, over-against the New Fort. It was form'd of great Piles ; and I made it so strong, that a very small Guard wou'd suffice to keep fifty Prisoners there in safe Custody.

THE Chain had been hung up incessantly Day and Night for three Weeks, for fear of a Surprize, before the Galley (which I had Orders to stop) came in Sight. According to the Plan I had form'd for the surer Execution of my Commission, I deviated in some measure from the Instructions of M. *Constance*. For as I did not think it consistent either with my Safety or my Dignity to go aboard her, while the *Macassars* were in Possession of her, I resolv'd to engage them to come ashore ; and after I had arrested them, then to

1686. go on board, and take the Inventory order'd by the Minister. With this View, as soon as ever I cou'd see them, I posted Soldiers at certain Places, ready to surround them whenever I sent Orders.

THE Galley arriving at the Chain, and finding the Passage stop'd, the Captain, with seven of his Men, came ashore to speak with me. He was conducted to the Old Fort, where I receiv'd him under a great square Pavillion, which I had caus'd to be built with Canes in one of the Bastions of the Fort; of which that Side fronting the Neck of the Bastion, was inclos'd by a large Curtain.

The Count's
Conference
with the
Macassars
Captain.

As they enter'd in, I made them a Compliment; and desiring them to sit down round a Table where I commonly din'd with the Officers, I ask'd the Captain from whence he came, and whither he was bound. He told me, that he came from *Siam*, and was returning to the Island of the *Macassars*; and at the same time shew'd me his Pass. After having made a Shew of examining it I told him it was a very good one; but I added, 'That as I was a Foreigner, and but newly enter'd in the King's Service, I ought to be more punctual than another in the Observation of all Orders given to me; and that by reason

1686.

of the Rebellion which he had undoubtedly heard of, I had receiv'd very strict Orders to hinder any *Siamefe* from going out of the Kingdom. The Captain said he had nobody aboard but *Macassars*. To which I answer'd, that I did not in the least question the Truth of what he said; but that, as I was encompass'd with *Siamefe*, who had a Spy upon all my Actions, I desir'd him, to the End that the Court might have nothing to lay to my Charge, to let all his Crew come ashore; assuring him, that after they were known to be *Macassars*, they wou'd have nothing to do but to go aboard again; that the Chain shou'd be taken away, and that they shou'd be at Liberty to go where they pleas'd.

THE Captain, without Hesitation, reply'd, *With all my Heart; but they shall come ashore arm'd.* Then, looking upon him with a Smile, *What, said I, are we in a State of War?* No, reply'd he; *but the Crit (Dagger) which I have by my Side, and which is the Weapon we all wear, is such a Mark of Honour among us, that 'tis infamous for us to be without it.* This Reason I thought was so unanswerable, that I comply'd, not thinking that a Weapon I then look'd upon

The *Macassars* Crit,
or Dagger,

1685. with such Contempt, wou'd prove so dangerous as I afterwards found it.

THIS Crit is a kind of Dagger about a Foot long, and an Inch and half broad towards the Hilt: 'Tis wav'd and pointed like an Adder's Tongue, is forg'd out of well-temper'd Steel, and has two Edges that cut like a Razor; they put it into a wooden Sheath, and never lay it aside.

THE Captain sent two of his Men to fetch the rest that were aboard, during which, I treated him with Tea, till I had Word brought me, that they were all landed, at which time I propos'd to send my Orders to apprehend them. As I thought it long before they came, I rose up, and pretending that I had some Order to issue, I desir'd a Mandarin who was present, to supply my Place; adding, that I wou'd return in an Instant.

MY Siamese Gentlemen, who were watchful of every Motion, were in great Pain to know for what I design'd the Soldiers that I had posted up and down. As I went out of the Pavillion, I found an old Portuguese Officer, a brave Man, whom I had preferr'd to be a Major, waiting for my Orders. Sir, said I, *Go and warn such and such to be ready; and as soon as the Macassars have pass'd such a Place, which I pointed to him, do*

you beg
arm the
I send
'em.

TH
what I
I ask y
pose is
Macass
of the I
ple not
first :
offer to
the Par
him, wi

I DI
ought t
Portugu
which
Executi
ry my
receiv'd
fore the
of it mo
away ve
Advice
Words
what ye
believe
you, 'ti

THE
on Con
no Risc

you

you begin to surround them, and then disarm them, and keep 'em under Arrest till I send you Word what must be done with 'em.

1686.

THE Portuguese being startled at what I had been saying; Sir, said he, I ask your Pardon; the Thing you propose is not feasible; you don't know the Macassars as well as I do: I am a Brat of the Indies; believe me, they are a People not to be taken; they'll lose their Lives first: And, let me tell you, if you do but offer to lay Hands on that Captain now in the Pavillion, he and the few Men with him, will kill every Mother's Son of us.

I DID not pay that Attention which I ought to have done to the Advice of the Portuguese; but persisting in my Scheme, which I thought very easy to put in Execution, Go, said I, to him, carry my Orders as punctually as you have receiv'd them; I am persuaded, that before they'll lose their Lives, they'll think of it more than once. The Major went away very sorrowful, leaving his good Advice with me at parting, in these Words: For God's sake, Sir, take heed what you do, they'll infallibly kill you; believe what I have the Honour to tell you, 'tis for your Good.

THE Zeal of this Officer put me upon Consideration. That I might run no Risque, I caus'd twenty Siamese Soldiers

1686.

diers (ten of which were arm'd with Lances, and ten with Muskets) to enter into the Neck of the Bastion; then I caus'd the Curtain of the Pavillion to be drawn; and advancing towards the Entrance, I order'd a Mandarin to go and tell the Captain from me, that I was very much concern'd at the Order I had to arrest him, but that he might depend on't, I wou'd in all Respects use him well.

His Encounter
with the
Macassars
when he arrested them.

THIS poor Mandarin, who serv'd me as an Interpreter, readily obey'd; but he had no sooner spoke the Word when the Six *Macassars* throwing their Caps on the Ground, drew their Daggers, and falling on like Devils, kill'd in an Instant my Interpreter and Six other Mandarins who were in the Pavillion. At the Sight of this Slaughter, I retreated towards my Soldiers who were arm'd; I snatch'd the Lance of one of them out of his Hand, and cry'd out to the others to fire.

ONE of these Six Desperadoes rushing upon me with his drawn Dagger, I plung'd my Lance into his Stomach; nevertheless, the *Macassar*, as if he had no Sense of Feeling, advanc'd upon the Weapon which I held fast in his Body, and made incredible Efforts to come at me, in order to run me through; and he wou'd infallibly have done

done
not h
best v
keepi
witho
till at
of the
upon
Of
kill'd
others
Escap
Bastio
Rage
vinc'd
had to
were i
began
who v
I chan
arresti
was no
have t
ble.
but w
assemb
ME
landed
on whi
tain,
Head
them
in case
done

done it, if the Hilt of the Blade had not hinder'd him. I found that my best way was to retreat a little, still keeping the Lance in his Stomach, without venturing to repeat my Thrust, till at length I was reliev'd by others of the Lance-men, who laid him dead upon the Spot.

1686.

Of the Six *Macassars*, Four were kill'd in the Pavillion, and the two others, tho' sadly wounded, made their Escape by leaping down from the Bastion. The Boldness, or rather the Rage of these six Men having convinc'd me, that what the *Portuguese* had told me was true, and that they were indeed Men not to be taken, I began to dread the other Forty-seven who were on the March. Therefore I chang'd the Order I had given for arresting them, and knowing there was no other Remedy, I resolv'd to have them all kill'd, if it were possible. With this View I not only sent, but went in Person to every Place to assemble the Soldiers.

MEAN time the *Macassars* being landed, march'd towards the Fort, upon which I sent Orders to an *English* Captain, whom M. *Constance* had put at the Head of Forty *Portuguese*, to intercept them and hinder their advancing; and in case they refused, to fire upon them,

1686. adding, that I wou'd be with him in a Moment, to support him with all the Soldiers I cou'd get together. Upon the Order which the *Englishman* sent them to halt, they made a sudden Stop, during which I caus'd my Men to advance in the best Order I cou'd. They were arm'd with Muskets and Lances; but were not much to be depended on, for they were all new-rai's'd Soldiers, and by no means fit for Action.

WHEN we were about Fifty Paces Length from the *Macassars*, we made a Halt. There were several Parleys betwixt us: I sent them Word, that if they pleas'd, they might return to their Galley; for I imagin'd, that in that Case it would be an easy Matter to kill every Man of 'em with Musket-Shot, because they had none to defend themselves with, Fire Arms being what they never carry. They made Answer, That they were very willing to return aboard, but that they wou'd not leave the Shoar without their Captain.

THE *English* Captain tir'd with all these Delays, sent to tell me, that since they would not hearken to Reason, he would that Moment attack those insolent Scoundrels, and accordingly without staying for my Answer, he march'd

march'd
visedly.

HE
but th
till the
after th
once, a
Arms a
to gird
a fort
shieldin
about

Portugu
with so
they br
to Piec
ceive th
they ha
immedi
my Co
Thousa
and Mu
that th
Macassa
all the
and Le
terrible

So
soon pu
new Fo
minded
those t
that fac

march'd against them very unad- 1686.
visedly.

He no sooner put himself in Motion, but the Forty-seven *Macassars*, who till then were squatted on the Ground after their Manner, rose up all at once, and rolling round their Left Arms a sort of Scarf, which they us'd to gird themselves with, they form'd a sort of Target with it, and then shielding their Bodies with that Bandage about their Arms, they fell on the *Portuguese* with their naked Daggers with so much Fury and Vigour, that they broke their Ranks, and cut them to Pieces almost before we could perceive they had attack'd them. When they had done this, they push'd on immediately towards the Troops under my Command. Tho' I had above a Thousand Soldiers arm'd with Lances and Muskets, yet they were so terrify'd, that they were all in Confusion. The *Macassars* defeated them, and killing all they could meet with on the Right and Left, the Slaughter prov'd very terrible.

So general was the Rout, that they soon push'd us under the Wall of the new Fort. Six of them more bloody-minded than the others, who pursued those that fled, enter'd the false Bray that faced the River, hard by the Wall
of

The *Macassars*
Victory.

1686. of the little Square Fort, got over to the other Side of the River, and where-ever they came, made a dreadful Destruction of Women, Children, and all that came in their Way, without Distinction of Age or Sex.

IN this Disorder the greatest Part of my Soldiers were so mutinous, that I suffer'd them to make their Escape, and as a Lance was the only Weapon I had, I got to the Bank of the Ditch, being resolv'd if I was pursu'd to leap into it, the rather, because it was full of Mud, which I thought would hinder them from pursuing me with their usual Agility.

THEY were so busy in killing, that they came within Ten Paces, and did not perceive me. There was not one of the poor *Siamefe*, but was too much terrified to face about in his own Defence. At last, when I saw no possibility of rallying them, I made haste to the Gate of the new Fort, which was only form'd of a Barrier, and got upon a Bastion, from whence I order'd some Muskets to be fir'd upon the Enemy, who being Masters of the Field of Battle, and finding nobody else to kill, retir'd to the Brink of the River.

AFTER having had a short Conference with one another, being drove to

the last
to put
fightin
Galley
arm'd
Lances
to giv
met.

TH
of the
the Cu
built
again
attack
in the
Such a
Parts
quickl
swimm
Backs.

I w
and fo
Bodies
pick'd
Muske
them;
whom
I ove
Broad
from
into
withi
to pu

the last degree of Despair, and resolv'd to put themselves under a Necessity of fighting, they went again aboard their Galley, set fire to it, and after having arm'd themselves with Targets and Lances, return'd ashoar with a Design to give no Quarter to any that they met.

1686.

THEY first burnt all the Barracks of the Soldiers, which according to the Custom of the Country, were only built of Canes, and then marching up again by the Side of the River, they attack'd and kill'd all that they found in their Passage without Distinction. Such a Massacre so alarm'd all the Parts adjacent, that the River was quickly cover'd by Men and Women swimming with their Children on their Backs.

I WAS so mov'd at this Spectacle, and so provok'd to see so many dead Bodies on the Field of Battle, that I pick'd up Twenty Soldiers arm'd with Muskets, and went aboard a Galley with them; in pursuit of those Desperadoes, whom about a League from the Fort I overtook, and we gave 'em such a Broadside, as oblig'd 'em to go farther from the River Side, and to retreat into some Woods which they found within Land. Having not Men enough to pursue them, and they being above
our

1686. our Match, I did not presume to endeavour to force them, but chose to return to the Fort.

As soon as I arriv'd there, I had Intelligence that the six *Macassars*, who had pass'd to the other Side of the false Bray, had made themselves Masters of a Convent of *Talapoins* and had kill'd all the Monks, among whom was a *Mandarin* of some Note, in whose Body one of the *Macassars* had left his Dagger, which was brought to me. I hasten'd thither with Four-score of my Soldiers arm'd with Lances, for as yet they knew not the Use of Fire Arms; and when I arriv'd at the Place, I found that the *Siamese*, no longer able to hold out, had been oblig'd to set the Convent on Fire.

I WAS told that the *Macassars* were hard by, squatting down in a Field full of thick Grass, almost three Foot in Height. I conducted my Troops thither, out of which I form'd two very close Ranks, threatening to kill the first Man that offer'd to fly. My Lancemen at first did but just move one Foot before the other, but by degrees my Presence made them bolder.

THE first *Macassar* that we came to, rais'd himself on his Feet like a Fury, and lifting up his Dagger, was going to fall upon my Men, but I

pre-

prever
Head
were
who
casion
laid o
miser
as usu
by ac
retreat
W
I was
cassar
a you
had k
Dagge
him a
Soldier
have b
alive,
they v
little
that t
Places
AT
assemb
sult w
and i
rally
Enemy
what
desirou
of the
pre-

prevented it, by knocking him on the Head with a Musket. Four others were kill'd successively by our *Siamese*, who never once flinch'd upon this Occasion, but stood by one another, and laid on their Lances heavily upon the miserable Wretches, who still fought as usual, chusing rather to meet Death by advancing, than to avoid it by retreating one Step.

WHEN I was proposing to return, I was told that there was a sixth *Maccassar* still behind, who prov'd to be a young Fellow, the very same that had kill'd the Mandarin and left the Dagger in his Body. When we found him among the Grass, I charg'd my Soldiers not to kill him, for I should have been glad to have carry'd him away alive, because he was disarm'd; but they were so exasperated, and gave so little heed to what I said to them, that they stabb'd him in a Thousand Places.

AT our Return to the Fort, I assembled all the Mandarins, to consult with them what Course to take, and it was resolv'd, that we should rally all our Forces and pursue the Enemy as soon as we cou'd learn to what Place they were gone. I was desirous then to know the Number of the Dead, and found that I had lost
on

1686.

A. m. 1686.
Count de Forbin
by the
Count.

1686. on this fatal Occasion Three hundred and sixty-six Men, and the *Macassars* but Seventeen, viz. 6 kill'd in the Little Fort, Six in the *Talapoins* Convent, and 5 in the Field of Battle.

As I was entring my Pavilion for a little necessary Rest, after the Fatigues I had underwent, I was astonish'd with a Spectacle which was the more dismal, beaause it was what I the least expected. Besides the Corpses of the *Macassars* and *Siamese* which, as yet, we had not found Time to carry away, I found, stretch'd at his Length, by my Bed-side, a young Officer whose Name was *Beauregard*, the Son of one of the King's Commissaries at *Brest*. He was left behind at *Siam*, and I had made him Major of all the *Siamese* Troops. When I saw him in this Posture, I thought him dead, and my Heart was ready to break.

A miracu-
lous Cure
perform'd
by the
Count.

PERHAPS what I am now going to mention will not be credited, because indeed it has much more the Air of a Romance, than of any thing else; yet I can assure the Reader, that I shall add nothing to it of my own Invention, and relate nothing but the naked Truth. As I drew near the Bed, and examined the young Man more strictly, I saw that he breath'd still, but he could not speak, and his

Mouth

Mouth
his Bel
and St
Thigh
help h
nor Su
him in
self.

HAV
Couple
restor
fewed
as I ha
Occas
Ligatu
after ha
and m
try'd i
Patient
cured.
any F
I obse
Entrain
as dry
coagula
der the
a few

NE
that on
fought
for son
him,
his Es

Mouth was all in a Froth; I found his Belly open, and his very Entrails and Stomach hanging out upon his Thighs. Not knowing what to do to help him, because I had no Remedy nor Surgeon, I ventur'd to manage him in the best Manner I cou'd myself.

HAVING, to this End, provided a Couple of Needles and some Silk, I restor'd his Entrails to their Place, and sewed the Wound up, in the Manner as I had before observed, on the like Occasions: I then made a Couple of Ligatures, which I ty'd together, and after having beat the White of an Egg, and mingled it with some Arrack, I try'd it for ten Days together upon the Patient, with such Success that he was cured. Indeed *Beauregard* never had any Fever, or other bad Symptom. I observed that when I replaced his Entrails in his Belly, they were grown as dry as Parchment, and clotted with coagulated Blood, yet it did not hinder the perfect Cure which follow'd in a few Days.

NEXT Morning I was informed that one of the six *Macassars*, who had fought in the Pavilion, was not dead; for some of the *Siamese* Soldiers had seiz'd him, and, for Fear he shou'd make his Escape, they had ty'd and bound him,

1686. him, to that Degree, that he look'd like a Ball of Packthread: I went to see him to ask Questions, and to get out of him, if possible, some Account, not only of his Comrades, but of the Commotions at *Louvo* and *Joudia*. This Devil, for it is more than Man can do, and suffer, had lain all Night in the Dirt, with a Composure of Mind that is perfectly astonishing, for he had no less than seventeen Wounds in his Body, made with the Lances. I ask'd him some Questions, but he made me Answer that he could not satisfy me, till I had caus'd him to be un-harness'd. There was no Fear of his escaping, so that I order'd a *French* Serjeant, who was with me, to unbind him; the Serjeant rested his Halbert against a little Tree, very near the wounded Man, and let it lie there after he had loos'd him, because he thought he was in no Capacity to make any Attempt.

THE *Macassar* was no sooner at Liberty, but he began to stretch out his Legs and Arms, and to feel the Use of them. I perceived that, in his Answers to the Questions which I put to him, he turned, and endeavouring to gain Ground, drew by Degrees nearer and nearer to the Halbert, to lay hold of it. I knew his Design, and addressing

addressi
within
us see
soon as
he actu
but his
his Cou
upon h
there w
fore I

I w
I saw p
seem'd
rest of
know
had so
much
been b
whom
that th
Island
were So
superst
them
racters,
and af
wore t
ble; T
a little
which
whom
ing M
Slaves

addressing myself to the Serjeant, *Keep within Reach of thy Halbert*, said I, *let us see what this Furioso durst do*. As soon as he thought himself near enough, he actually rushed upon it to seize it; but his Strength not being equal to his Courage, he fell, as it were, dead upon his Face, upon which I saw that there was no hopes of him, and therefore I instantly dispatch'd him.

I WAS so astonish'd at every Action I saw perform'd by these People, who seem'd to me so different from all the rest of Mankind, that I was curious to know how it came to pass that they had so much Courage, or rather so much Fury. The *Portuguese* who had been born and bred in the *Indies*, to whom I put this Question, told me, that they were the Inhabitants of the Island *Celebes* or *Macassar*; that they were Schismatical *Mahometans*, and very superstitious; That their Priests gave them Letters written in magic Characters, which they ty'd to their Arms, and assured 'em that as long as they wore them, they wou'd be invulnerable; That one Thing contributed not a little to render them cruel and intrepid, which was a firm Belief that all Persons whom they kill'd in this World, excepting *Mahometans*, shou'd be as so many Slaves to serve them in the other. The

A general
Account of
the *Macassars*.

Portuguese

1686. *Portuguese* told me moreover, that they are so strongly impress'd from their very Infancy, with what they call the Point of Honour, which with them is never to submit, that it was never yet known that any one of them acted in Breach of it.

BEING full of these Notions, they never beg Quarter nor give it, and ten *Macassars*, with their drawn Daggers, will attack ten Thousand Men; and no Wonder, for Men who have such Principles ingrafted in their very Nature, are void of all Fear, and are very dangerous People to deal with: They are of a middling Stature, a tawny Complexion, nimble, and very lively. As for their Habit, they wear close Breeches after the *English* Manner, a Waistcoat of white or grey Cotton, and a Stuff Cap border'd with a Roll of Linnen about three Inches in Breadth. Their Legs are bare, but on their Feet they wear a Sort of Slippers call'd *Babouches*; and they gird their Loyns with a Scarf, in which they hang their devilish Weapon. Such had those I was engaged with, who unhappily kill'd so many of my Men.

BEAUREGARD whom I had still under Cure, being in a fair Way after I had replaced his Entrails, and beginning to recover his Speech, I had

a Mind

a Min
his W
fighting
Fort,

He
Men tu
he thou
and ra
from ki
perceiv
he was
in his
Arm w
Wound
Conditi
made a
Hands,
where f
fainted,
the sam

I GAY
Advent
Manag
Indicati
yet I di
see that
wrote t
had no
gave hi
of ever
and ad
against
were in

a Mind to know how he came by his Wound, because while we were fighting with the six *Macassars* in the Fort, he was without.

He told me, that when he saw two Men tumble Headlong from the Bastion, he thought one of them was the Captain, and ran thither to hinder the *Siamese* from killing him. That the *Macassar* perceiving it, and counterfeiting as if he was dead, suffer'd him to come within his Reach, and then made a long Arm with his Dagger, and gave him that Wound which I had seen: That in this Condition, not knowing where to go, he made a Shift, with his Intrails in his Hands, to come to the Pavillion, where finding nobody to help him, he fainted, and fell on my Bed, almost in the same Posture I had found him.

I GAVE an Account of this unhappy Adventure to M. *Constance*. Tho' his Management was but too manifest an Indication of his ill Will towards me, yet I did not think it proper to let him see that I resented it, and therefore I wrote to him in such a Style, as if I had not the least Suspicion of him. I gave him a very circumstantial Detail of every Thing that had befallen me, and advised him to be on his Guard against the rest of the *Macassars* who were intrenched in their Camp, and to learn

1686.

learn to beware by my Misfortune. When he had received my Narrative, he made such a Report to the King as he thought fit; and, as no doubt, the Minister was not pleased that I had behaved so well, he sent me a Letter full of Reproaches, accusing me of Imprudence, and charging all the Massacre on my want of Conduct; and he concluded with an Order, that I should no longer arrest the *Macassars*, but put all to the Sword that I could meet with.

I DID not stay for his Instructions upon this Article; for the very next Day after we were routed, I call'd all the Mandarins together again, and distributed Troops among them, with Orders to guard the Avenues on purpose to prevent the Enemy, who were retir'd to the Woods, from returning to spread another Alarm along the River Side, which is the most populous Part of the Country, and the Place where they might be capable of doing most Mischief.

A FORTNIGHT after this, being inform'd that they had been seen two Leagues from *Bancock*, I hasten'd thither with fourscore Soldiers, whom I put aboard my Galley, the Country being still under Water. I arrived at the very nick of Time to raise the

Spirits

Spirits
above
so ma
four
A T
aband
seized,
ing: I
but th
of M
Wood
People
for th
flying
mies.
that th
of the
possible
Bancock
WHE
those W
that the
were ta
M. Ma
my Con
worthy
took so
argued v
they we
after the
SOME
assar v
Missiona
VOL.

Spirits of the People, of whom I saw above Fifteen hundred that fled like so many Sheep before about Twenty-four *Macassars*. 1686.

AT my Arrival those Furiosos abandon'd some Gallies which they had seized, and betook themselves to swimming: I order'd my Men to fire at them, but they were soon out of the Reach of Musquet-Shot, and retir'd to the Woods. I rally'd all the affrighted People together, and reproach'd them for their scandalous Cowardice, in flying before such a Handful of Enemies. This so animated the Cowards, that they pursued them to the Entrance of the Wood, where seeing it was impossible to force them, I returned to *Bancock*.

WHEN I arrived, I found two of those Wretches, who being so wounded that they could not follow the others, were taken Prisoners by our *Siamese*. *M. Manuel*, a Missionary, who was in my Company, thinking them Objects worthy of his compassionate Zeal, took so much Pains with them, and argued with them so powerfully, that they were converted, and died a little after they had receiv'd Baptism.

SOME Days after this, a third *Macassar* was brought to me. The Missionary preach'd a great deal to him,

1686. him, but to no purpose, for the poor Wretch asking whether his turning Christian would save his Life, and being told no, said, *If I am to die, what matters it whether I stay with God or the Devil?* Upon this his Head was cut off, and as I was ordering it to be carried away, and exposed at the Top of a Lance, a *Siamese* desired me not to do it, affirming that one or other would certainly carry it off in the Night-time, to make use of it for Witchcraft, to which this Country is very much addicted. I burst out a Laughing at what he said, and after bantering the *Siamese* Superstition, I gave Orders that the Head should be set up in some conspicuous Place, as a Terror to others.

IN about a Week's time, some Peasants in a great Fright came to tell me, that the Enemy had appear'd upon the Bank of the River, and robb'd a Garden of some Herbs, and a very great Quantity of Fruit.

I WENT thither with about One hundred Soldiers, arm'd with Lances and Musquets, and found above Two thousand *Siamese* there, who shew'd me the very Place where the *Macassars* had eat and slept.

Defeat of the
sculking
Macassars.

BEING tir'd with the Dance which such a Handful of Enemies had led me

so lo
speed
sand
posted
with
close
follow
open'd
As the
had n
but w
time t
especia
with m
some S
to doub
march'd
ceived
in a Po
I WA
to avoid
into a
Hand,
Compan
Moment
their sma
were ou
then ran
had. H
alter my
Enemy,
Array.
leg in

1686.

so long, I resolv'd to bring it to a speedy End. I divid'd my Two thousand Men into two Bodies, which I posted on the Right and Left, and with One hundred Men I set out in close pursuit of those wild Beasts. I followed the Track which they had open'd in the Water through the Grass. As they were almost famish'd, having had nothing to eat for a Month past but wild Herbs, I saw it was high time to dally with them no longer, especially as I had none but fresh Men with me, from whom I might expect some Service; I therefore order'd them to double their Pace. After we had march'd about half a League, we perceived the Enemy, and put ourselves in a Posture to overtake them.

I WAS very close at their Heels, to avoid which they threw themselves into a Wood which was on the Left-Hand, from whence they fell on a Company of my Soldiers, who the Moment they saw them, discharged their small Arms at them, though they were out of the Reach of Shot, and then ran away with all the Legs they had. However this did not make me alter my Resolution; I overtook the Enemy, and put my Soldiers in Battle Array. As we were up to the Mid-leg in Water, where the *Macassars*

I 2 could

1686.

could not come at us with their usual Activity, they got to a little Hill, encompass'd with a Ditch, in which there was Water as high as a Man's Neck.

I INVESTED them, and when I came within ten or twelve Paces of them, I call'd out to them by the Mouth of an Interpreter to surrender, assuring them, that if they trusted to me, I would engage to get their Pardon from the King of *Siam*. They were so offended at this Proposal, that they pointed their Lances to us in Token of their Indignation, and then leaping into the Water with their Daggers in their Teeth, they swam towards us, to attack us.

THE *Siamese*, encouraged by what I said and did, made such a proper Discharge at those Desperadoes, that not one of them escap'd. They were but Seventeen in all, for all the rest had perish'd in the Woods for Want or else died of their Wounds. I caused some of them to be stripp'd, and found them all as dry as so many Mummies, their very Bones being ready to start out of the Skin. They had all upon their Left-Arms those Characters we spoke of, with which they think themselves Invincible, upon the Word of their Priests, who, for

a ve
ever
Su
Adv
jecte
had l
it h
Live
happ
Envy
Bu
Injust
upon
ter, h
briefl
regar
who a
intren
M. C
him,
above
the Co
French
these
the E
the lat
led C
thinkin
Siamese
charg'
good C
in a Bo
on a f

a very Trifle, wretchedly seduce them every Day of their Lives. 1686.

SUCH was the End of this unhappy Adventure, which for a Month subjected me to incredible Fatigues, that had like to have cost me my Life, as it had done so many of my Mens Lives, and which would never have happen'd, had it not been for the Envy of a jealous cruel Minister.

BUT to give a farther Proof of the Injustice of the Reproaches that he cast upon me, when, in Answer to my Letter, he tax'd me with Imprudence, I will briefly relate what pass'd at *Siam* with regard to the Prince of the *Macassars*, who after the Conspiracy was discover'd, intrenched himself in his Camp. M. *Constance* being resolv'd to attack him, had for that Purpose assembled above Twenty thousand Men, under the Command of forty *Europeans*, viz. *French*, *English*, and *Dutch*. With these Troops he undertook to force the Enemy's Intrenchments. At first the latter seem'd to give Way, which led *Constance* into an Error; for he thinking them routed, commanded the *Siamese* to pursue them. His Men first charg'd, and then follow'd them in good Order; but not keeping together in a Body, the *Macassars* wheel'd about on a sudden, and fell upon them with

1686.

Constance
the Minister
defeated by
the *Macassars*.

such Vigour, that they presently kill'd seventeen of the *Europeans*, and above One thousand of the *Siamefe*, and *M. Constance* himself narrowly escap'd by leaping into the River, in which he would have been drown'd had it not been for one of his Slaves.

THE Number of dead Bodies which floated down the River before *Bancock*, were the first Couriers that brought us the News of this Overthrow, after which the Minister was not a little embarrass'd. He caused several Proposals to be made to the Prince of the *Macassars*, but he would hearken to none. At last, when he found that nothing else would do, he resolv'd to make a second Attack, for which he was two Months preparing, and in which he came off with more Honour, because he had concerted his Measures more wisely than he had done before. Experience having shewn him, that he had to do with People whom he could not easily Master by attacking them with open Force, he thought of a Stratagem which succeeded, and to which he was obliged for the Victory.

The *Macassar's* defeat-
ed by the
Minister.

As the Country was overflow'd, so that they were obliged to march up to the Mid-Leg in Water, he caused Hurdles to be made of Canes, which were stuck pretty thick with great Nails

Nails
up ha
These
the T
in suc
comin
their
they f
for m
advan
Num
stand
Th
them
being
came
them
rather
beg
any sp
Sons,
They
Tacha
Navy
An
the r
himse
cassar
cock.
bat,
the F
Soldi
frous

1686.

Nails with three Points, which stood up half a Foot above the Hurdles. These Machines were carried before the Troops, and hid under the Water, in such a manner, that the *Macassars* coming furiously, as usual, to make their Attack, and not seeing where they set their Feet, were so hamper'd for most part, that not being able to advance or retreat, a considerable Number of them were shot dead standing.

THOSE that escap'd, intrench'd themselves in Houses of Canes, which being burnt about their Ears, they came out half roasted, and suffer'd themselves to be knock'd on the Head, rather than one Man of them would beg Quarter; nor were the Lives of any spar'd but the Prince's two young Sons, who were carried to *Louvo*. They afterwards went with Father *Tachard* to *France*, and serv'd in the Navy.

AFTER this short Digression relating the manner how *Constance* extricated himself out of the Broil with the *Macassars*, I return to my Business at *Ban-cock*. Having no more Enemies to combat, I employ'd myself in advancing the Fortifications, and disciplining my Soldiers, after which I was very desirous to take a Tour through my

The Author's Tour thro' his Government.

1686. Government, both to make myself known, and to discover the State of the Country.

IN order to be received with the Distinction suitable to my Dignity, I did not fail to send notice before-hand to all Places that I came to, so that the Mandarins, and other Persons of the greatest Distinction, were sure to provide for my Reception in the most elegant Manner they could. They commonly came to meet me, and after having put me in such Lodgings as made the best Appearance, paid me Homage and Obedience as one that represented the Person of the King.

SOMETIMES it happen'd, that several of them, to curry Favour with me, and to give me to understand that they were Persons of some Note in their Village, declar'd they were akin to *Baloan*. The *Baloans* are the Catholick Missionaries; but as I did not know what they meant by that Kindred, I desired them to explain themselves. I learn'd from them, that some of our *European* Missionaries, who pretended to be great Men at Court, and impos'd on the Credulity of the *Siamese*, a simple People, that loved to be sooth'd, made no Scruple, when they were desired by those who courted their Protection, to contract certain

Mar-

An Account
of the Catholick
Missionaries at
Siam.

Marri
Count
venien
they c

I T
comica
that I
heartil
entert
came
not fa
pence.
really
were c
no ot
but it
I knew
ner m
to pay
Father
Kindre
not da
he ma
and tu
But
Truth
ried P
that e
the ot
ing, f
racter
cially
Indies.

1686.

Marriages, very customary in the Country, and attended with this Convenience, that they last no longer than they can give Pleasure.

And of their
unaccount-
able Mar-
riages.

I THOUGHT there was something so comical in this unexpected Discovery, that I could not help laughing at it heartily. When some that I knew entertain'd these extravagant Whims, came to pay me their Respects, I did not fail of being merry at their Expence. The Generality of them were really ashamed of their Folly, and there were one or two of them that needed no other Argument to reclaim them; but it was not so with a *Portuguese* who I knew had been married in this manner more than once. When he came to pay his Visit to me, I said to him, *Father, I find you have a great many Kindred in this Country.* My Jest did not dash him out of Countenance, for he made no more of it than a Trifle, and turn'd it off with a Banter.

BUT I must say, in Justice to the Truth, that the Number of these married People, is very inconsiderable, and that excepting some obscure Priests, all the other Missionaries, generally speaking, support the Dignity of their Character by extraordinary Virtues, especially the Jesuits, whose Conduct in the *Indies*, is as unblameable as it is in *Europe*.

1686. And as to those few who deviate from their Duty, no wonder, that in Countries so far off, where they are left to themselves without Superiors to instruct them, and watch over their Conduct, they lose a Taste for Piety by little and little, and then give Way to every Temptation which continually presents itself in one Shape or other to seduce them; for in *Europe* we sometimes see, that the Priests and Fryars run into the same Irregularities, in spite of all the Opportunities they have to guard against them.

The Author's Visit to one of their *Talapouins*.

IN my Tour, I pass'd through a Village where they told me that hard-by lived a *Talapouin* (one of their Fryars) who was fam'd all over the Country for his Virtues. His Fraternity had such a Veneration for him, that they made him their Superior; so that on account of his Dignity he was a Man of great Note among the *Siamese*, as a Bishop is in *France*. I turn'd out of my Road to visit him, and found him to be an old Gentleman, who claim'd Reverence, not only by his great Age, but by an Air of Modesty which grac'd him from Head to Foot.

His Squeamishness in refusing an extraordinary Compliment from him.

IN order to do me Honour, he put some *Betel* into his Mouth, and after having mumbled it a pretty while, presented it to me to chew in like man-

mann
ciled
to acc
One
me,
fuse a
the K
Honou
yourse
two
Mout
I had
Hand
TH
variou
Num
to be
travel
their
than
out, t
the
Land
upon
the C
feren
are a
of ea
Halt
Lead
vanc
four
Grin

manner; but I was not yet so reconciled to the Nastiness of the *Siamese*, as to accept of the Favour he design'd me. One of the Mandarins who was with me, said, that I did not do well to refuse an Honour which was only due to the King and to me. *I resign that Honour to you*, said I, *swallow the Pill yourself if you like it*. He did not make two Words of it, but opened his Mouth, and receiv'd the Betel which I had refused, from the *Talapoin's* Hands, with a great deal of Respect.

THIS Country swarms with Apes of various Kinds, of which I saw a vast Number in my Journey. They love to be near the River, and commonly travel in Companies, with a Leader at their Head, of a much larger Size than the others. When the Tide is out, they feed upon the little Fish which the Water leaves behind upon the Land, and when it returns, they perch upon the Trees, where they stay till the Country is dry. When two different Companies that happen to meet, are advanced within a certain Distance of each other, they seem to make a Halt, and then the great *Macous*, or Leaders of the two Companies, advance towards one another three or four Paces, chatter, and make such Grimaces, as if they confabulated; and

A Description of the Apes of this Country.

1686.



then wheeling about on a sudden, each goes to join the Company of which he is the Leader, and they go different Ways.

A She-Ape
chastised by
her Leader
for Incon-
tinence.

I OFTEN took a Pleasure in observing their Ways and Manners. I saw a Dozen of them one Day picking themselves as they lay basking in the Sun. A Female, that was in the Height of her Lust, rambled from her Company, and was followed by a Male: The great *Macou* quickly perceiving it, ran after them. The Male was too nimble for him, but he brought the Female back, and, in the Presence of the others, gave her above fifty Blows, by way of Chastisement for her Incontinence.

A Worm
brought to
our Author
as a Present.

As I was passing through a Village, where I just stay'd to refresh myself, a Mandarin, who was the chief Person in it, came in a great Hurry to make me a Present of a Worm, about nine Inches long, and as big in Proportion. It was all over white, and in Shape like one of our Silk-Worms, only it was much longer. This honest Man reckon'd he had brought me a dainty Bit, so that I could not help smiling at his Simplicity; and turning towards another Mandarin that accompanied me, I ask'd him if this Worm was good to eat: 'Tis most excellent, said he; upon which I desired him to ac-

cept

cept of
alive v
somethi
the Ma
me thin
savoury
pleasan
have t
saw Oy
them ra
them :
by whic
makes
that w
People
AFT
ment,
spent f
diers,
tions,
was pa
cident.
bare-fo
were c
by litt
and ab
so ven
it thro
and in
Twent
Remed
have a
they p

1686.

cept of it, and the Mandarin eat it alive very greedily. I observed that something like Cream issued out of the Mandarin's Mouth, which made me think the Insect could not be so unfavoury. Had it not been so unpleasant to the Eye, I could willingly have tasted it. So those who never saw Oysters, if they were to see us eat them raw, would have an Aversion to them : Yet Oysters are very good ; by which we may learn, that Custom makes Things more tolerable, and that we ought not to quarrel with People on account of their Tastes.

AFTER having visited my Government, I return'd to *Bancock*, where I spent some time in exercising my Soldiers, and forwarding the Fortifications, that went on but slowly, which was partly owing to the following Accident. As the *Siamese* always go bare-footed, my Workmen, as they were digging, were very often stung by little Serpents, of a silver Colour, and about a Foot long, whose Bite is so venomous, that in an Hour's time it throws the Patients into Convulsions, and infallibly carries them off in Twenty-four Hours, if a speedy Remedy be not applied. The *Chinese* have an admirable Antidote for it ; they put an artificial Stone to the Wound,

Venomous
Serpents.

The *Chinese*
Antidote
for the Cure
of their Poi-
son.

1686. Wound, to which it sticks presently, and soon after the Convulsions cease, the Patient recovers his Senses, and the Stone drops off of its own accord, when it has attracted all the Venom. The same Stone will serve always for the same Purpose, provided it be steep'd for Twenty-four Hours every time, in the Milk of a Woman's Breast.

Our Author
grows weary
of the Coun-
try.

NOTWITHSTANDING my Employment at *Bancock*, I began to be weary of the Place. The Favours with which the King had honour'd me at *Louvo*, made my Stay in this Part of the World somewhat tolerable; but after my Departure from thence, every Day made it more and more irksome to me to live in a Place where there were no Pleasures, and where I saw no Prospect of advancing my Fortune. I therefore wish'd to return to Court, and wrote concerning it to *M. Constance*, but he did not desire to see me about the King's Person, and never wanted an Excuse for Non-compliance with my Request.

It was much about this time that four of the Jesuits, who made the Voyage with us to *Siam*, came to see me at *Bancock*. Father *Tachard*, as we have already said, was return'd to *France* with the Ambassadors. *Constance* had retain'd Father *le Comte* with him;

him;
Father
and
of a P
I
manne
I ofte
stance's
every
to ruin
cassar's
they w
genera
at leas
Accou
to me,
Minist
I w
that I
M. Co
tho' th
did not
publicl
all my
far as
me to r
Speed.
I in C
and th
last, a
Demo
Sides,

him; and the four others, viz. the Fathers *de Fontenay*, *Bouvet*, *Gerbillon*, and *Visdelou*, having the Opportunity of a Passage, sailed to *China*.

I ENTERTAINED them in the best manner that I could, while they staid; I often talk'd with them upon *Constance's* Severity to me, and told them every particular Step that he had taken to ruin me. When I related the *Macassar's* Affair to them, I found that they were appriz'd of it before in the general; but they were ignorant, or at least had received a very confused Account, of the Order which was sent to me, and of the Conduct which the Minister desir'd me to observe.

His Conference with the Jesuits, who persuade him to return to France.

I WAS convinced by what they said, that I talk'd to Persons who knew *M. Constance* as well as I did; and tho' the Fathers, in Point of Prudence, did not think proper to tell their Minds publicly, yet after sympathizing with all my Troubles, and comforting me as far as lay in their Power, they advised me to return to *France* with all convenient Speed. Thus we spent several Days, I in Complaints against the Minister, and they in comforting me; and at last, after a great many very sincere Demonstrations of Friendship on both Sides, we embrac'd with Tears in our Eyes,

1686.

Eyes, expecting never to meet again in this World.

THOUGH I had for some time past entertain'd Thoughts of preparing for my Return to *France*, yet the late Conversation I had with those four Jesuits more strongly confirm'd me in that Design. I was continually reflecting on the miserable State of the Country, for which I saw no Remedy, and on the Treachery of a Minister, to whom I had done all the Good I could, and who, to reward my faithful Services, had not only removed me from Court, but had likewise offer'd to poison me, and attempted to take away my Life many other Ways.

WHILE my Thoughts were intirely taken up about my Return, I had Reason to be confirm'd in my Purpose, by a new Order which I received from Court, which made it very plain to me, that *Constance* had still Malice against me in his Heart.

AN *English* Ship had been for some time at the Bar, which carried forty Guns, and ninety Men, all *Europeans*. M. *Constance* pretended, that the Captain of this Ship had formerly cheated the King of *Siam* of Merchandize to a considerable Value. Under this fair Pretext, he sent me Orders to go aboard her, with no more than two Men,

Another of
the Mini-
ster's Plots
against him.

Men,
for Hi
of the
written
own H
I cou
said, t
not mu
was no
laid for
stance.
his Oro
up and
should
intimat
templa
me in
said
now
perceiv
said
an C
H
Med
foun
out
in E
that
resol
for
thos
Mai
puts

1686.

Men, and to arrest the said Captain for High-Treason : The very Words of the Order I have preserved, as 'tis written in *French*, in Father *le Comte's* own Hand.

I COULD plainly see, as I have already said, that this Commission, which was not much unlike that of the *Macassars*, was nothing more than a new Trap laid for me by the Jealousy of M. *Constance*. However, I resolved to execute his Orders literally. As I was walking up and down, musing which Way I should accomplish it, M. *Manuel*, my intimate Friend, perceiving me so contemplative, ask'd me what had put me in such a profound Study? ' *There,* ' said I, *read that Order, which I have just now receiv'd.* ' This honest Missionary perceiving what it was, ' M. *Constance,* ' said he, does not think of it, and 'tis ' an Order impossible to execute.

' HOWEVER, I replied, the deep ' Meditations in which you have ' found me so immerg'd, are to find ' out what Course I shall take to put it ' in Execution ; for I confess to you, ' that I am stung to the Quick, and ' resolved to confound M. *Constance* ' for ever, by letting him see, that ' those Projects which he thinks in the ' Main impossible, and which he only ' puts upon me in hopes that I shall ' perish

1686. ' perish in the Attempt, are not be-
 ' yond my Reach.' M. Manuel, sur-
 prized at my Resolution, did all he
 could to dissuade me from it. ' You
 ' talk to no Purpose, said I, my Reso-
 ' lution is fixed, and I shall not retract
 ' it were it to cost me my Life. The
 ' Macassars were a late Instance which
 ' 'tis good to follow. We should always
 ' push forward, and never go back-
 ' wards. However, don't be cast
 ' down, I will use Precaution, and I
 ' still hope to extricate myself happily
 ' out of this wicked Snare.'

AT these Words I left him abruptly,
 and went on board my Galley with
 fourscore Oars. To be revenged on
 M. Constance, I was so malicious as to
 take his Wife's Uncle along with me,
 who was a very honest Man, the Son
 of an *European* and an *Indian*, but no
 Hero. I chose him for one of my
 Seconds, because he should run half
 the Risque, and have an Opportunity
 of seeing with his own Eyes, what
 Baseness M. Constance was capable of.

IN our Passage from *Bancock* to that
 Part of the Road where the Ship lay,
 the honest *Japonese* continually asked
 me whither I was going to carry him?
 It was yet too soon to let him know it,
 so I only turn'd off his Questions with a
 Banter. When we came to the Bar,
 there



there was a Necessity for our quitting the Galley, because Vessels of this Sort are only fit for the River : I took a Boat proper for the Sea, and having put eight of my Men on Board, together with the Uncle of Madam Constance, and the Governor of the Bar, we put out a great Way into the main Road.

WE were not two Leagues from the *English* Ship when my *Japoneſe* again asked me whither I was carrying him. All the Answer I made him, was producing the King's Order, which I explain'd to him in the *Portuguese*. It frighten'd him out of his Wits. 'What have I done to you, Sir, said he, that you should drag me thus to the Slaughter-House ; and what Regard do ye think the *English* Captain will pay to the Orders of the King of *Siam*, whom in this Case he has no Reason to fear, since 'tis certain he will be too hard for him ? Sir, said I, They who are in the King's Service, must obey him in the Letter, without considering the Dangers of it. Our Lives and Fortunes are the Property of our Sovereigns, and they may dispose of them as they please.'

ALL those Arguments were so far from convincing the good Man, that they only increased his Terror, which prevailed the more the nearer we drew to

1686.

to the Ship. To encourage the
 Coward, ' I'll tell you, Sir, *said I*,
 ' an Expedient I have found for taking
 ' this Captain, without running too
 ' great a Risque either for you or me.
 ' My Aim is to oblige him, under
 ' some Pretext or other, to come on
 ' board my Vessel. To this End I'll
 ' go aboard his Ship, and you shall fol-
 ' low me. He will not fail to shew
 ' me a great deal of Respect, to which
 ' I will make a Return; and, as I
 ' have contrived it, imagine I shall
 ' carry the Point: Mean time, there,
 ' take the King's Order, put it in
 ' your Pocket, and keep it till we
 ' have Occasion for it. But arm your-
 ' self with Courage and Boldness,
 ' otherwise all our Scheme will infalli-
 ' bly miscarry. But, *replied the over-*
 ' *cautious Man*, if it should not succeed
 ' as you imagine, what will you do?
 ' Then, *said I*, I will act the true
 ' *Macassar*, I'll draw my Sword, I'll
 ' tell the Captain that I have Orders to
 ' arrest him, and that if he makes the
 ' least Resistance, I will kill him: At
 ' these Words you shall produce the
 ' King's Order, and call out to all the
 ' Crew, that if they resist, his *Siamese*
 ' Majesty will cause every one of them
 ' to be hang'd. Alas! Sir, *said he*,
 ' we han't long to live. 'Tis decreed
 ' for

‘ for us, *said I*, to die to Day or To-morrow, what matters it when, provided it be gloriously?’ 1686.

MEAN time we came up to the Ship; I went aboard first, followed by the *Japoneſe*, who was half dead with Fear and Trembling. The Captain perceiving how he ſhook, asked me what ailed that Gentleman. *Nothing at all*, ſaid I, *only he is afraid of the Sea*. We then enter’d the Cabbin, where Wine was ſet before me, and I was welcom’d with the Diſcharge of a great Number of Cannon. After the Captain had made a great many Excuses for the Dress in which he receiv’d me, for I found him in his Night-Gown and Cap, he asked me what Affairs brought me aboard?

Our Author’s Stratagem to decoy the Captain of an *English* Ship ashore.

‘ *AFFAIRS*, ſaid I, of very great Importance. His *Siameſe* Maſteſty having received Advice, that the *Dutch* have made a very conſiderable Armament at *Batavia*, with a Deſign to come and burn all the Ships in the Road; and being moreover informed, that they are actually at Sea, I have Orders to aſſemble all the Captains of Ships, and the Maſters of other Veſſels, that we may hold a Conference together, and conſult what Meaſures to take, that we may not be ſurprized before we

1686.



‘ we are provided to give them a suitable Reception. As M. *Constance* knew you was here, he order’d me to apply chiefly to you, and to pay a Deference to your Opinion, because he is convinc’d both of your Valour and Experience.’

THE Captain believing every Tittle of what I had told him, ‘ I’ll fit my Sloop out to Sea this Instant, *said he*, and send to give Notice to all the Officers in these Parts, to come on board my Ship, and hold a Council upon an Affair of such Importance. A very good Thought, *said I*, and then making a short Pause, as if I had hit upon another Expedient, ‘ But, Sir, *continued I*, your Ship being the furthest off, would it not be better for you to go yourself in the Sloop, and then we will go, you one Way, and I another, and bring all the Captains in the Road together? We need only carry them to the Ship nearest the Bar, and when the Council is over, every one may return aboard his Vessel without going so far about.’

THE *Englishman* had no manner of Mistrust of what I had said to him, and voluntarily acquiesced in the Proposal. Still I fear’d that he would alter his Mind, therefore I said, *Let*

us

1686.

us us improve the Time, I perceive the Tide is coming in. At these Words I rose up and went into my Boat, but had no sooner seated myself down, when pretending that I had forgot something that was very material, I call'd out to the Captain, who, to do me Honour, kept standing on the Side of the Ship to see me put off, 'Sir, said I, if you will give yourself the Trouble to come into my Boat, I have something else of Importance to communicate to you.' At the same time I bad one of my Rowers keep the mooring Cable in his Hand, and to let it go when I order'd him. The *Englishman* came on board to me very frankly, and when he was fate down, I spoke softly to my Sailor, and in the *Siamese* Language, that the *Englishman* might not understand me, commanded him to let go the Cable. Then laying my Hand on the Captain's Shoulder for the Conveniency of whispering him, that we might not be heard, 'Sir, said I, since I have Orders from the King of *Siam*, to follow your Advice preferably to any other Man's, 'tis convenient that you should be here with me, and that we should also lay our Heads together, that we may be of one Opinion when we are all assembled.'

As

1686.

As it was a strong Tide, the *Englishman* quickly perceived it was driving him from his Ship, and ask'd me whither I was carrying him in that Undress; and at the same time, without waiting for my Answer, call'd out to his Crew. Upon that, I order'd my Men to row away lustily to Land, and declaring to the Captain the Order that I had receiv'd, I told him how sorry I was that I had been obliged to make use of so much Artifice in the Execution of my Commission, and begg'd him not to be uneasy, assuring him that he should not want Cloaths nor any Thing that was necessary for his Subsistence.

MEAN time the *English* Sloop, which was mann'd out in a very short time, began to give me Chase. When I perceiv'd I could not avoid being taken, I went aboard a *Portuguese* Ship, and taking my Pistol in my Hand, *Go aboard that Ship*, said I to my Prisoner; *if you hesitate, you are a dead Man*. When we were got aboard, I call'd on the Officer to assist me with all the Hands he had. The honest Fellow put himself in Motion, but he had only eight or ten starving Wretches aboard, a feeble Support against thirty *Europeans* that were coming towards us, well arm'd, and resolv'd to fight.

2 A

WHEN

W
Expe
said
' you
' tha
' for
' you
' find
' you
with
Engli
Haza
go b
When
I retur
thank
sail'd
nothin
Englis
him.
I d
M. Co
ecuted
the fa
compl
Circun
Match
dang
self wi
mission
too m
that it
Admir
Vo

1686.

WHEN I cou'd think of no other Expedient to avoid being taken, I said to the Captain, ' Sir, command your Sloop to return, and consider that otherwise your Life is at Stake; for if they come near, I will sacrifice you first, and then perhaps I shall find a Way to defend myself against your Men.' I spoke these Words with such a resolute Air, that the *Englishman* was not willing to run the Hazard of it; but order'd his Men to go back, and was instantly obey'd. When they were got far enough off, I return'd aboard my Boat, after having thank'd the *Portuguese* Captain, and sail'd to *Bancock*, where I took care that nothing should be wanting to make my *Englishman's* Confinement tolerable to him.

I DID not delay to give Notice to *M. Constance*, how faithfully I had executed the King's Commission; but at the same time I thought proper to complain of it, though I did it with Circumspection, for he was above my Match, and I had to do with a dangerous Enemy. I contented myself with remonstrating, that the Commissions which he put me upon, were too mean for one of my Dignity, and that it did not look well to send an Admiral such Orders as wou'd be more

1686.

fuitable for Officers of an inferior Rank.

AT the same time I sent my Prisoner to *Louvo*, where he made up his Affair for Ten thousand Crowns, which M. *Constance* thought fit to put in his Pocket. As for me, this Minister deny'd he had sent me the Order which I acted by, tax'd me a second Time with Rashness and Folly, and forbid me in the King's Name, to go beyond two Leagues from *Bancock*. This was all the Recompence I had for so dangerous an Expedition, in which I only engag'd in Obedience to the Orders that I had receiv'd.

Our Au-
thor's Con-
finement to
Bancock.

I WAS so exasperated at this Procedure, that without any more ado, I resolved to go to *France*, the first Opportunity that offer'd. But as I saw no Hopes of it yet, at least for some time, I chose to dissemble my Chagrin, and to wait with Patience for the happy Moment. To divert myself in this sort of Exile, for since the last Letter I had from this Minister, I look'd upon myself in a State of Banishment, I pass'd away the tedious time in catching of Crocodiles.

The Man-
ner of
catching
Crocodiles.

THERE'S a great Number of them about *Bancock*. The *Siamese* have two Ways to take them, of which one is this: They take a live Duck, tye a

Piece

Pie
ten
poin
Wo
whi
Can
they
The
Mid
fatig
a N
enga
it, p
from
tang
whic
they
disco
by t
strik
Crea
notw
get
Fishe
him,
a H
fix'd
long
whic
Sock
threa
Hand
the X

1686.

Piece of Wood under its Belly, about ten Inches long, and big in Proportion, pointed at both Ends. To this bit of Wood they tye strong Packthread, to which they fasten Pieces of Bamboe Cane, a light Sort of Wood, which they make use of instead of Cork. Then they throw the Duck into the Middle of the River, which when 'tis fatigu'd by the Piece of Wood, makes a Noise, and beats its Wings to disengage itself. The Crocodile perceiving it, plunges into the Water, rises up from the Bottom to seize it, and entangles himself by the Piece of Wood which sticks in his Throat. When they perceive he is caught, which they discover by his pulling and haling, and by the Motion of the Bamboo, they strike at the Signal, and bring the Creature to the Top of the Water, notwithstanding all his Struggles to get loose. When he appears, the Fishermen dart their Harping Irons at him, which are a sort of Darts, with a Head resembling that of an Arrow, fix'd in a Stick of about five Foot long for a Handle. To this Iron, which is split where 'tis join'd to the Socket, they tye a Piece of Packthread, which is twisted round the Handle, and which in floating upon the Water, shews the Place where the

1685.

Animal is. When he has been sufficiently gall'd by the Harping Irons, they draw him to Land, and hew him to Pieces with a Hatchet.

THERE'S another Way of taking them, which is as follows: These Creatures come some times very near the Houses; but being exceeding timorous, they frighten them away either by their Voices, or by shooting off their Muskets, upon which the Crocodile flies and dives to the Bottom of the Water. The River is immediately cover'd with Gallies, watching to see where he comes up to breathe; for he can't lie above half an Hour under Water without rising to the Top for the Air: As soon as he pops up his Head, he stretches open his wide Mouth, when the Harping Irons are darted at him from all Sides, and if he receives any in his Throat, in which the *Siamese* are very dextrous, he is surely taken. The Handle of the Harping Iron which floats, being tied to a Cord, serves as a Signal, whereby he who holds it, knows when the Animal comes up from the Bottom, and advertises the Fishermen of it, who fail not as soon as he appears again, to dart him with fresh Harping Irons, and when he has received enough to be brought to shoar, they drag him out and cut him in Pieces.

THE

1685.

Description
of the Cro-
codile.

THE Flesh of the Crocodile is whitish, much like that of a Sea-Dog; I have tasted it, and think it is not bad: 'Tis a frightful Creature to look at. There are some in the River from Twelve to Twenty Foot long: They have very flat Jaw-bones, with two great Teeth on each Side, one in the upper Jaw, and the other in the lower, which start out like the Tusks of a wild Boar, so that when they bite any thing, 'tis not possible to take it from them.

ONE Day that I return'd from the hunting of the Crocodile, I was perfectly surpriz'd when I came Home, to find the four Jesuits there who set out not long before for *China*. Those Fathers were in a lamentable Case; they had been shipwreck'd on the Coasts of *Cambodia* and *Siam*, and had suffer'd beyond Expression, being under a Necessity of passing on Foot through Countries in a manner unpassable. I embrac'd them with a great deal of Joy, and did all that lay in my Power to make them some Amends for the Disasters they had met with.

As all the wicked Proceedings of *M. Constance* lay heavy at my Heart, I shew'd them the Orders I had receiv'd about the *English* Captain, and the Minister's Answer to the Letter I wrote to him after that Expedition.

1686.



As cautious as they were of what they said, they cou'd not help expressing their Indignation, and speaking with more Freedom to me than they did the Time before; they advis'd me, in plain Terms, to withdraw from the Country as soon as I could.

THEY gave it as their Opinion, that the Minister who had taken Umbrage at the Favour I was in at Court, and who wish'd for nothing so much as my Destruction, would pursue me so often with his Malice, and would at last concert his Measures so well, that I should not be able to escape him. That since the Lord had preserv'd me hitherto, I ought not to tempt his Providence; but on the contrary to resign, and to withdraw from a Country where my Life was in continual Perils. The Fathers added upon this Head all the obliging Things that can be imagined; I detain'd them as long as I could; but after two Days were over, they were willing to return to *Joudia*, to wait for another Opportunity of embarking again for *Cbina*.

As to my own Part, being loth to stay much longer, I resolv'd to return with a Ship of the *East-India* Company, that came a few Days before, and anchor'd at the Bar. This Ship came with Merchandize from *Pontichery* to

take

take
the
pany
of t
C
had
Man
me,
go a
there
him
his I
urg'd
was
Day,
in th
in P
retire
best
he w
he wa
to *F*
it not
a Re
Liber
BE
a you
whof
Affec
him
Bastin
with
than

take up other Goods here, this being the ordinary Traffick which the Company drives every Year from one Part of the *Indies* to the other.

CONSIDERING the Employments I had held at *Siam*, and the obliging Manner in which the King had treated me, I did not think it convenient to go away like a Deserter. I wrote therefore to M. *Constance*, and desir'd him to solicit the King to grant me his License to depart. The Reason I urg'd for it was, that my Health, which was more and more impair'd every Day, did not permit me to stay longer in the Kingdom; and I offer'd to go in Person to Court to desire Leave to retire, if he thought that would be the best Way to obtain it. This was what he was far from consenting to, and as he was now not afraid of my returning to *France*, he sent me in Answer, that it not being the King's Intention to lay a Restraint upon me, I was at my Liberty to go where I thought fit.

The Count
desires
Leave to re-
turn to
France.

BEFORE I left *Bancock*, I wrote to a young Mandarin of my Acquaintance, whose Name was *Prepi*; he had a great Affection for me, for the Service I did him formerly in saving him from a Bastinado; for tho' he was a Favourite with the King, who lov'd him more than any young Man at Court, he

1687. would not have escap'd that Chastisement, if I had not interfer'd. I told him when I took my Leave of him, that I was just returning to *France*, and desir'd him to let me always have a Share in his Friendship, to continue his Love to the *French*, to the Missionaries, and to the Jesuits, and to protect them all as he had done hitherto.

The King
of *Siam*'s
Concern for
the Count's
Departure.

PREPI, who was sorry that I was going away, spoke of it to the King, who knew not a Tittle of what had passed, and seem'd surpriz'd at the Tidings. He ask'd his Minister what were the Reasons that oblig'd me to retire, and bad him send for me to Court, that he might inquire himself what Grounds I had for my Disgust. I was inform'd of all these Particulars by *Prepi*'s Answer. Upon this Order, *Constance* was in a very great Perplexity: He was absolutely bent against my Appearance at Court, and yet the Order was positive. To extricate himself out of this Dilemma, he commanded a *Portuguese* Officer, who was entirely at his Devotion, to come on board the *French* Ship, on pretence of doing me Honour, and then to conduct me to Court, as by Order from the King.

The Minister's last
Plot to destroy him.

THE Contrivance of this Snare was too gross to surprize me. I knew that

that t
Order
Guar
M.
Comp
heard
made
there
Bisho
Take
Hand
Const
Peopl
the R
secure
that t
he wi
to be
the C
Princ
his M
that t
be you
of an
since
your
I
for h
dressi
him,
Rega
his A
witha

1687.

that the King of *Siam* never sends his Orders by any but the Soldiers of his Guard. The Bishop of *Metelopolis*, M. *Manuel*, and the Factor of the Company, who were all present, and heard what the *Portuguese* said to me, made no Scruple to signify to me that there was a Snake in the Grass. The Bishop especially, taking me aside, said, *Take Care how you put yourself into the Hands of these Portuguese; I know M. Constance: you may depend on it, these People have Orders to assassinate you on the Road, and then the Minister will secure himself by getting them hanged, that they may not accuse him, after which he will tell the King that he caused them to be executed, to revenge the Death of the Chevalier de Forbin, which this Prince, who only sees with the Eyes of his Minister, will take to be as true as that the Sun shines. Believe me, it will be your best Way to get out of the Reach of an Enemy so subtle and so malicious, since you are so happy as to have it in your Power.*

I THANK'D him, as in Duty bound, for his good Advice, and then, addressing myself to the Officer, told him, *That I shou'd pay no Manner of Regard to the Order he came with; that his Majesty having given me Leave to withdraw, it was not probable that he*

K 5

had.

1687. *bad alter'd his Mind so soon, or that he was dispos'd to detain me any longer in his Dominions, after all the solid Arguments which I had done myself the Honour to set before him; that he might therefore go whenever he pleas'd, and carry my Answer to M. Constance.*

The Count's
Departure
for France.

I HAD not talk'd in such a high Strain, only I considered that as I had not long to stay at *Siam*, I had nothing more to fear from the Malice of the Minister. In short, we set sail the very next Day. I was so glad that I was leaving this cursed Country, that I already forgot whatever I had suffer'd in it. As we pass'd thro' the Straits of *Malacca*, we met with contrary Winds, which oblig'd us to cast Anchor. We went ashore and found excellent Oysters, which stuck so to the Rock, that we were glad to take out the Fish and leave the Shell.

He meets
with Rock-
Oysters in
the Straits
of *Malacca*.

WHILE we stay'd in these Parts, I went a pretty Way into the Country, where finding the Haunts of some Fallow-Deer, I advanc'd a little farther in hopes of finding some Game to kill with my Gun. It happen'd that whilst I was looking this Way and that Way, a monstrous Ape came towards me with Eyes, as it were, darting Fire, and such an Air of Assurance as wou'd have quite daunted me

His En-
counter
with a Ba-
boon.

me in
went
about
Piece
Spot.

It
look
was a
the G
of the
great
like
The
I had
if I
certai
and
aboard
never
Indies

FR
pass'd
which
savag
Men
Fish
in the
duce
Sort
Thirt
that
great

me if I had not been arm'd ; but I 1687.
went to meet him, and when we were
about ten Paces distant, I fir'd my
Piece, and shot him dead upon the
Spot.

It was really a frightful Animal to
look at. It had a Tail as long as a Lyon,
was above two Foot and a half from
the Ground, eight Foot from the Tip
of the Tail to the Head, and had a
great long Face deform'd with Pimples
like the Visage of some Drunkard.
The Country People assur'd me that
I had good Luck to kill it, because,
if I had miss'd my Mark, it wou'd
certainly have strangled me. I went
and call'd our Seamen to carry it
aboard, and they protested they had
never seen so large an Ape in all the
Indies.

FROM the Strait of *Malacca*, we
pass'd between the Islands of *Nicobar*,
which are inhabited by People perfectly
savage, who go stark naked, both the
Men and Women, and live only upon
Fish and some Fruits which they find
in the Woods. For their Islands pro-
duce neither Rice nor Pulse, nor any
Sort of Grain for their Nourishment.
Thirty Leagues from these Islands lies
that of *Andaman*, which we saw at a
great Distance: The Inhabitants of it

A Descrip-
tion of these
Nicobar
Islands.

1687. are the cruelest Cannibals in all the
Indies.

An Island
 of Canni-
 bals.

Pontichery
 describ'd.

AT length we arrived at *Pontichery*, one of the most noted Factories belonging to the *French East-India Company*, who have a Director General, and several Commissioners. 'Tis the Grand Magazine for Linnens, Muslins, and Goods of all Kinds brought from the *Indies*. The Company's Ships come every Year from *France* to buy up these Linnen Goods, and carry them to *Port Louis*.

The Au-
 thor's
 hearty Re-
 ception
 there.

M. *MARTIN*, who was at that Time Director of the Factory, entertain'd me with the greatest Civility in the World, and was continually heaping Favours on me all the time I stay'd in the Country. It was not in my Power to go away as soon as I cou'd have wish'd, because I was forc'd to stay a pretty while for the *European Ships*, which came in this Year somewhat later than usual. My ordinary Diversion during my Stay was Hunting. In this Country are a Kind of Foxes which they call *Chestnut Dogs*, of which I caught some almost every Day with *Grey-Hounds* that I had train'd up myself, and which were easily form'd for this Kind of Hunting, which is very amusing.

AN

AN Adventure happen'd here which had like to have cost me my Life.:

1687.

The Commissioner of one of the *French* Company's Ships who was lately arriv'd, desired I would take him along with me. After we had hunted some Hours, my Grey-Hounds started one of these Foxes, which, finding himself press'd, ran into a Sort of Coney-burrow. I thought the best Way wou'd be to smoak him out, and, for that Purpose, I got a Bundle of Rice-Straw, with which I fill'd the Hole, and set Fire to it. As I stoop'd down to blow it, a Creature bolted out of it on a sudden, which tumbled me down, bury'd me in Straw, Fire and Smoak, and then leap'd over my Head into a River which was but just by: All this was done in such a Trice, that the Animal had plung'd itself into the Water before I was able to get upon my Legs. The Commissioner made no doubt but 'twas a Crocodile or a Cayman. Whatever it was, I was horridly terrify'd, and thought my self well off, that I far'd no worse.

The Count's
Danger in
Fox-hunt-
ing.

THE Inhabitants of *Pontichery* are very black, but not of the *Caffre*-Kind; They have handsome Features, a Complacency in their Looks, and fine lively Eyes; they let the Hair of their Heads grow down to their Waist. Their

The Inhabi-
tants of
Pontichery.

1687.

Their Man-
ners and
Customs.

Their Nation is distinguish'd by Casts or Tribes. The *Bramins*, who are the Priests of the Country, are in greater Veneration than all the others, and next to them are the Shepherds. These People are, above all Things, cautious of matching with any but their Equals, so that a Shepherd may not pretend to claim Kindred to a *Bramin*. And if it happens that any one of a distinguished Tribe, marries a Woman of an inferior Rank, he falls from his own Rank to that of the Family to which he is ally'd: But the Women lose nothing by mis-matching. Among all these Casts or Tribes, the most contemptible is that of the Shoe-makers, excepting that call'd *Paria*, which they look upon with Horror, because they don't scruple to feed upon the Flesh of all Manner of Animals.

Their reli-
gious Cere-
monies and
Supersti-
tion.

THESE People, who are Idolaters, have a famous Temple a League from *Pontichery*, to which they repair on a certain Day every Year to celebrate a Festival in Honour of their principal Deities. There being a vast Concourse from all Parts, I went out of Curiosity to see it. After a Thousand Ceremonies, of which they gave me a Rehearsal, for I cou'd not enter the Temple, they brought out the God and Goddess to whose Honour they were

were
giga
The
Cha
Post
was
was
Men
bers
geth
Gro
echo
of t
upon
a H
to P
enter
W
saw
the
stark
whic
way
Reaf
and
had
Sort
Gods
I cou
there
befor
none

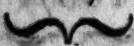
1687.

were assembled : These Idols are of a gigantick Figure, and very well gilt. They plac'd them Face to Face on a Chariot with four Wheels, and the Posture and Attitude of both Deities was somewhat lascivious. The Chariot was drawn by two or three Hundred Men with Ropes, and the vast Numbers of People that were gather'd together, fell flat on their Bellies to the Ground, while the whole Country echoed with Shouts of Joy ; and some of them were simple enough to hang upon the Chariot-Wheels, thinking it a Happiness to be bruis'd or crush'd to Pieces in Token of the Respect they entertain'd for their God.

WHEN this Ceremony was ended, I saw both Men and Women rolling on the Ground about the Temple, and stark naked, except a Piece of Linnen which reach'd from the Waist to half way of the Thigh. I ask'd for what Reason they thus mangled their Bodies, and was told, that they were such as had no Children, and hop'd by this Sort of Penance to prevail with their Gods to grant them Issue. This is all I cou'd then learn of the said Festival, there being no Entrance for me, as I before observed, into a Temple where none are admitted but Idolaters.

HOWEVER,

1687.



Their Temple
and
Idols.

HOWEVER, I was curious to see it, and therefore two Days after I went thither again. I stood at the Door with seven other *French* Men, who were likewise desirous of Entrance, but the Chief of the *Bramins* would not admit us, on Pretence that it was not lawful for him to prophane it by letting in Christians. Upon this Denial I said not one Word, but advancing to him, snatch'd a Ponyard from his Side, presented the Point to him, and threatned to kill him, upon which he fled without bidding. Then we enter'd, and found it a vast Edifice, but nothing in it besides a great Number of Idols of different Sizes, and all in wanton Postures. While we were amusing ourselves with the Sight of 'em, the *Bramin*, resenting the Affront we had put upon him, went and alarm'd the Neighbourhood, and came towards us at the Head of above three Hundred Men. But these People, who have actually not a Dram of Courage, were so terrified when they saw us with Fire-Arms, that there was not one of them that had the Boldness to come near.

A SHIP belonging to the *India* Company being ready to sail much about that Time for *Masulipatan*, a City famous for Commerce, and the Ships from

from
resol
trave
which
for t
siege
to see
make
and
Pow
will
relate

W
we w
Win
able
had
one.
from
thick
we a
for F
furl'd
Clou
Win
ber
purp
Fran
Mea

T
with
every
from

from *France* not being yet expected, I resolved to embark, and thought of travelling from that Town to *Golconda*, which is but Thirty Leagues from it; for the Place being at that Time besieged by the Great Mogul, I long'd to see after what Manner those People make War, and how they form Sieges and Attacks; but it was not in my Power to gratify my Curiosity, as will appear from what I am going to relate.

WHEN we sailed from *Pontichery*, we were in the Season of the Westerly Wind, that is to say, in the most favourable Season of the whole Year, so that we had a very happy Passage and a quick one. We were not above Eight Leagues from *Masulipatan*, when we saw a black thick Cloud come off from Land, which we all thought to be a Storm, and, for Fear of an Accident, immediately furl'd all our Sails. At length the Cloud came aboard us with very little Wind, but attended with a vast Number of great Flies, with Tails of a purple Colour, like those we see in *France*, which leave Maggots upon our Meat.

A Storm of
Flies.

THE Ship's Company was so pester'd with them, that, for a few Moments, every Man aboard was obliged to hide from 'em. The Sea was quite cover'd with

1687. with 'em, and we had such Swarms aboard the Ship, that it requir'd above Five Hundred Barrels of Water to cleanse it.

WHEN we were about four Leagues from *Masulipatan*, we perceiv'd somewhat like a Mist, which cover'd it all over. The nearer we came to it, the more it spread; so that in a little time we saw nothing but the Point of Mountains, which serv'd as a Guide to the Pilots. As we approach'd to Land, we saw that this Cloud was nothing but an incredible Multitude of Flies, quite different from the former; for these had four Wings, and resembled those we see about our Rivers, whose Tails are strip'd with Yellow and Black. The nearer we came to the Town, the more we had of these Insects, of which there were such Clouds, that we cou'd not see Land, but were oblig'd to make it by Sounding. When we were in such a Fathom, the Pilot gave Direction for casting Anchor; when *Delande*, one of the Company's Commissioners, who had Orders to visit the Factory, took the Sloop to go ashore, and the Captain and I accompany'd him. The Multitude of these Flies was so great, that we were oblig'd to carry a Compass aboard, that we might not miss the Land,

Swarms of
another
Sort.

Land,
ly; b

TH
such
the 'T
Custom
so tha
but fo
surpris
we wa
where
East-I
cross's
Man,
Aspec
pany's
quickl

AF
of Gro
House
we for
gues's
becau
The
every
ing af
cle, I
dressin
Let's
Good
his C
ther;
count

Land, which they hid from us entirely; but at last we arriv'd.

1687.

The Count's
Arrival at
Masulipatan.

THERE being no Soul at the Port, such of our Ship's Company as knew the Town, were our Guides to the Custom-house. The Office was open, so that we went into every Part of it, but found nobody attending. Being surpriz'd at this uncommon Incident, we walk'd to that Part of the Town where the Office of the Factory of the *East-India* Company was kept, and cross'd several Streets without seeing Man, Woman, or Child. This desolate Aspect of the whole Town being accompany'd with an intolerable Stench, we quickly guess'd what was the Matter.

A Plague
there.

AFTER we had walk'd a great deal of Ground, we came to the Company's House. The Gates were open, and we found the Director dead, tho' we guess'd he had not been long deceas'd, because every Part of him was intire. The House had been ranfack'd, and every thing appear'd in Disorder. Being astonish'd at so frightful a Spectacle, I return'd into the Street, and addressing myself to the *Sieur Delande*, *Let's go aboard again*, said I, *there's no Good to be got here*. He told me, that his Commission oblig'd him to go farther; and that, as he must give an Account of his Voyage, he wou'd not return

1687. turn aboard till he had at least seen some Person capable of giving him a particular Account of the Causes of all this Confusion.

THEREFORE we march'd on till we came to the *English* Factory, which we found close shut; and tho' we knock'd ready to break the Door down, nobody made Answer. From thence we went to the *Dutch* Factory, where, out of fourscore Persons, there remain'd but fourteen alive, who look'd more like Skeletons, than Men. They told us, that the Town had been brought to this Pass by a Plague; that most of the Inhabitants were dead, and the rest gone into the Country; that they could give us no News relating to the *French* Factory; that the *English* had abandon'd theirs, after having lost the best Part of their Officers; and that as for themselves, they had an immense Treasure in their House, and were forbid, on Pain of Death, to quit it, or else they had not stay'd.

CONSIDERING the present Condition of this miserable Town, there was no Probability of meeting with a Vessel to carry me to *Golconda*. I was forc'd to drop all Thoughts of seeing the Siege, so that we return'd on board, to tell what we had seen and heard. We set sail immediately for the Port of *Mergui*, which

which
was v
from
to es
Harb
from
was o
I thou
from t
TH
Masul
went
The
be un
they I
next
wou'd
Sailors
sick li
as the
few D
My
accom
Sweati
low, t
Violen
my E
cou'd
And, r
visions
was no
for we
vision

1687.



which belongs to the King of *Siam*. I was very loth to return to a Country from which I found it so hard a Matter to escape ; but considering, that this Harbour was above an hundred Leagues from the Court ; and moreover, that I was on board a *French Ship*, I thought I shou'd be in no manner of Danger from the Malice of *M. Constance*.

THE third Day after we sail'd from *Masulipatan*, some of the Sailors, who went ashore with the Sloop, fell sick. The Cause of their Illness cou'd not be unknown. The Surgeon finding they had a Fever, let them Blood ; and next Day I had a Fever myself, but wou'd not be blooded. All the other Sailors, who came in the Sloop, fell sick likewise, and were blooded as well as the others, but all of 'em dy'd in a few Days.

My Fever still continued, and was accompany'd with such an excessive Sweating, as quickly brought me so low, that I cou'd scarce speak. The Violence of my Distemper weaken'd my Eyes too, to such a degree, that I cou'd not perfectly distinguish Objects : And, to compleat my Misfortune, Provisions began to fall short, so that there was nothing left aboard to make Broth ; for we cou'd take in but very little Provision at *Pontichery*, where such a Dearth prevail'd,

The Count's
Sickness &
Distress.

1687. prevail'd, as was next akin to a Fa-
mine.

I NEVER was in greater Distress in all my Life. Not knowing what to do, I order'd my little *Siamese* Lacquey, who never car'd to leave me, to bring me some *Persian* Wine, of which I had a good Stock. I drank about half a Glass, and took a hearty Nap for some Hours, when I awoke all in a Sweat. My Sight seeming to be a little stronger, I return'd to my Remedy, took a double Potion of it, and slept a second time; after which I wak'd again all in a Bath, but found myself much stronger. As the Remedy operated, I took it a third time, sopping a Piece of Biscuit in the Wine, which afterwards I eat. I repeated this for several Days, after which my continual Fever chang'd to a double Tertian.

M. *DELANDE* and the Captain, who were seiz'd with the same Distemper, refus'd Bleeding, after my Example, and wou'd have no Remedy but mine; upon which their Illness abated by degrees, and they recover'd as well as I. At last we arriv'd at *Mergui*, where, by the Assistance of Refreshments, which we were no longer in need of, we were in a few Days able to walk abroad. Of the seventeen Persons that went ashore in the Sloop, all the four-

teen

teen w
cordin
the Ca
only
so tru
all pe
W

Mergu
with a
tending
to wh
had be
Comm
with C
succee
he wa
Father
as we
in goo
Service
had le
Court
best U
Dispos
Jesuit
the Pr
sent T
Cheval
tress o
cording
TH
Amba
that ac

1687.

teen who were blooded, dy'd; and, according to all Appearance, M. *Delande*, the Captain and myself sav'd our Lives only by our refusing to be let Blood; so true is it, that Bleeding is mortal in all pestilential Fevers of this Kind.

WE had not been many Days at *Mergui*, before M. *Ceberet* arriv'd there with a great Number of Mandarins attending him in his Return from *Louvo*, to which Place he and M. *la Loubere* had been sent from *France* to treat of Commerce, and to settle all Matters with *Constance*; for Father *Tachard* had succeeded in the Commission, which he was instructed to negotiate. This Father having been dup'd by *Constance*, as we have already said, and thinking in good Earnest that he shou'd do a Service both to the Church and State, had left no Stone unturn'd to bring the Court into his Views, and to make the best Use of the *Siamese* Minister's good Disposition; and accordingly, upon this Jesuit's Promise, the Court accepted of the Project of an Alliance, and actually sent Troops under the Command of the Chevalier *Desfarges*, who had the Fortrefs of *Bancock* deliver'd up to him according to Agreement.

The Success of Father *Tachard's* Negotiations at the Court of *France*.

Their Embassy to *Siam*.

THE Mandarin, who had been sent Ambassador to *France*, was one of those that accompany'd M. *Ceberet*. As soon

as

1687.

The Count
meets with
an old
Friend of
his, a *Siam-
ese* Manda-
rin that
had been
in *France*.

as he perceiv'd me, he ran to me, and his Head being full of the Magnificence he had seen in *France*, he told me, that I had great Cause to wish for my Return to my own Country; that he had seen all my Family there, and a great Number of my Friends, with whom he had talk'd of me; and after he had extol'd the Court, and every thing which hit his Fancy more than ordinary, he added, in bald *French*, *La France grand bon, Siam petit bon*.

M. *CEBERET*, who came by Land from *Louvo* to *Mergui*, dismiss'd all the Mandarins, after having made them considerable Presents, and then embark'd with us on board the Company's Ship, in which we sail'd for *Pontichery*. Upon our asking him how his Negotiation had succeeded with M. *Constance*, he publickly declar'd, that he was not pleas'd with him; and that he had trick'd the Court, by promising them mere Trifles, which had not the least Appearance of Reality.

M. *CEBERET* and I were never afunder during the whole Voyage; but our ordinary Discourse was about the Kingdom of *Siam*, and the Manners and Customs of the People. He was so astonish'd to find them so poor, and to see the Misery of the Kingdom, that it was unaccountable to him how

The French
Ambassa-
dor's Opini-
on of M.
Constance.

any
to g
their
N
you
of:
large
for a
find
the
Bank
there
in the
no C
which
watry
Riche
you w
saw e
the w
the P
moditi
AM
still th
wish'd
of the
As to
Matter
he they
per ad
where
nter i
e said
Vor

any Persons cou'd have the Assurance to give such a pompous Narrative of their Wealth and Grandeur. 1687.

YET, said I to him one Day, *What you saw was the most they have to boast of: The whole Kingdom, which is very large, is little more than a vast Desert; for as you advance within Land, you will find nothing but Forests and wild Beasts, the Inhabitants chusing to live on the Banks of the River, because the Lands there being laid under Water six Months in the Year, produce almost, with little or no Culture, a great Quantity of Rice, which only comes up and multiplies in watry Places. In this Rice the entire Riches of the Country consist; so that as you went up from the Bar to Louvo, you saw every thing that was worth seeing in the whole Kingdom, both with Regard to the People, their Towns, and their Commodities.*

The Count's Description of Siam to him,

ANOTHER time, the Country being still the Topic of our Conversation, he wish'd I wou'd give him some Account of the King's Behaviour in his Palace. As to this Article, I reply'd, 'Tis no easy Matter to inform you. Those without Doors, be they of what Distinction soever, are never admitted into that Part of the Palace where the King resides; and such as once enter it, never go abroad. All that can be said in Particular is, that every thing

and of the K. of Siam's Court;

1687. *is conducted in it with the utmost Secrecy. Every one has not only his particular Employment mark'd out for him, but his separate Quarter, beyond which he is never allow'd to ramble. They who wait in the Chambers which are nearest the Gate, know no more of the Palace, than what happens in that Place. In the Chambers adjoining to those are Officers, who know no more than the others; and so successively to the King's own Apartment, who generally keeps close to it, and thinks that such Retirement is the principal Part of his Grandeur; for when he confers with his Ministers and his greatest Favourites, he appears at a Window almost a Fathom higher than the Ground; and after a short Declaration of his Will and Pleasure to them, disappears again.*

And of the
Minister.

M. CEBERET asking me Questions also about M. Constance, I told him all that I knew of that Minister; and tho' he had a pretty good Guess at his Views and Politicks, I gave him an Insight into many Things which had escap'd him, and which he did not doubt the Truth of, when he was enabled to compare what I told him with what he knew before.

His Arrival at Madraspatan, or Fort St. George.

MEAN time, we came near to Madraspatan, a Town famous for its Commerce. There was no Appearance of our returning from the Indies to Europe without

1687.

without carrying some of the Stuffs and Rarities of the Country. Being resolv'd to lay out some Money there, I desir'd the Captain of the Ship to set me ashore. The *English* are Masters of this Place. The Director-General of their Company, who was a sworn Enemy to M. Constance, hearing that I lodg'd with the *French* Capuchins, was resolv'd, at all Events, to take me to his House. He also took the Superior of those honest Fryars to his House, and upon my Account, shew'd him great Civility. These Fathers are settled in the Suburbs, and administer the Sacraments to the *Portuguese*, or *Mistices*, who are *Roman Catholics*.

HE prepar'd a very splendid Dinner for me; during which there was Discharge of a great many Pieces of Cannon, and we drank the Healths of the Kings of *England* and *France*, and both their Royal Families. Constance was not spar'd at Table; and the Director said publicly, that he wou'd have him hang'd, if he cou'd but catch him. Mean time we continu'd drinking, till we were every one drunk, the Capuchin as well as the rest; tho' it was not so much his Fault, because he was forc'd to drink almost whether he wou'd or no.

His Reception by the Governor, who makes him and his Companions drunk.

1687.

The Count's
Arrival at
Ponticheri.

His Pre-
sent from
M. Bontems

His Departure
for
France.

1688.

Arrival at
the Cape of
Good Hope.

WHEN I had bought up what I had a Mind to, the Director gave me a little Vessel to carry me to *Ponticheri*, which is but twenty Leagues from *Madraspatan*. At my Arrival there, I found one of the King's Ships that was come to fetch M. *Ceberet*. It was commanded by M. *du Quene Guitton*, who deliver'd into my Hands a fine Gun and a pair of Pistols of admirable Workmanship. 'Twas a Present which M. *Bontems* sent me as a Token of his Friendship, and of his Gratitude for some very curious Pieces which I had sent him by the Return of the Ambassadors.

AFTER M. *Ceberet* had finish'd all his Affairs at *Ponticheri*, we embark'd and sail'd for *France*; and during the Voyage, he and I often talk'd about the Kingdom of *Siam*. He discours'd to me upon the Envy of M. *Constance* and the Dangers to which he had so often expos'd me: And tho' he had been inform'd by our Countrymen at *Joudia* and *Louvo*, both of my Adventure with the *Macassars*, and with the *English* Captain, he wish'd wou'd relate the whole to him myself.

AFTER a very good Passage, we ca Anchor at the Cape of *Good Hope*, and there took in some Refreshments. We anchor'd also at the Island of *St. Helena*

which

which

which belongs to the *English*, and soon after at *Ascension* Island, where we caught a great Number of Tortoises, and other Fish. At length we arriv'd safe in the Harbour of *Brest*, where we landed towards the latter end of *July*, 1688; which was about three Years and half after I departed thence with M. de *Chaumont*.

1688.

And at
Brest.

WHEN I had landed all the Merchandize I bought at *Madraspatan*, I sent the Bales to *Paris* by the Carrier, who goes thither every Week. But before I deliver'd them, I had the Precaution to declare to him, and to enter into his Book both the Quantity and Quality of the Goods, which consisted of Screens, *China* Cabinets, Tea, *Porcellane* Ware, several Pieces of *India* Stuffs of all Sorts, and a very considerable Quantity of Stuffs of Gold and Silver; and after I had given the whole in Charge to him, I set out Post for *Paris*, where I waited on M. de *Seignelay*, Minister of the Marine, who receiv'd me very kindly, and presented me himself to the King, who gave Orders, that I shou'd be paid all my Salary from the Time of my Departure to that Day.

He sets out
for *Paris*,
and waits
on M. de
Seignelay.

It was to the Friendship of M. *Bontems* that I was oblig'd for so favourable a Reception; for M. de *Seignelay* having taken it very ill, that I paid that Defe-

His Obligations to
his Friend
M. *Bontems*.

1688.

rence to the Orders of *M. de Chau-*
mont, as not to return to *France*, had
 caus'd me to be struck off of the Esta-
 blishment ; but when *Bontems* heard of
 it, he mentioned it of his own Accord
 to the King, who commanded the Mi-
 nister to make no Innovation upon my
 Account, but rather to advance me,
 when Opportunity offer'd, with a Pre-
 ference to many others.

His Atten-
 dance on
 the King,
 and the
 Questions
 put to him
 by his Ma-
 jesty, rela-
 ting to
Siam; with
 the Count's
 Answers.

I WAS so transported with the Man-
 ner of my Reception, that I waited on
 the King at Dinner, who did me the
 Honour to ask me a great many Quef-
 tions relating to the Kingdom of *Siam*.
 He ask'd me in the first Place, if the
 Country was rich : *Sire*, said I, *the*
Kingdom of Siam neither produces nor
consumes any thing. That's a great deal
said in a few Words, reply'd the King.
 And among other Questions which he
 continued to ask me, he inquir'd what
 Manner of Government it was, how the
 People liv'd, and how the King came
 by all the Presents which he had sent
 him. I return'd for Answer, that the
 People were very poor : That there
 were no Persons of Rank or Figure
 among them, because they were all born
 Slaves to the King, and oblig'd to work
 for him one half of the Year, unless he
 pleases to dispense with that Service by
 advancing them to the Dignity of a
 Mandarin

1688.

Mandarin : That tho' this Dignity raises them out of the Dust, yet it does not screen them from Disgrace by the Prince, in which they are easily involv'd, and which is always follow'd with severe Chastisements : That the *Barkalon* himself or Prime Minister, who fills the chief Office in the State, is as much expos'd to it as the others : That he only maintains himself in a Post so dangerous, by creeping servilely before his Master like the meanest Subject : That if he happens to fall into Disgrace, the mildest Treatment he can expect, is to be severely punish'd, and then sent back to the Plough-Tail : That the People live only upon Fruits, and Rice, which grows here in abundance : That as they all believe the Doctrine of *Transmigration*, nobody durst eat any thing that has Life, for fear of devouring some Parent, or other Kindred : That as to the Presents which the King of *Siam* had sent to his Majesty, M. *Constance* had drain'd the Exchequer, and been at so much Expence, that it wou'd not be an easy Matter for him to make it good : That the Kingdom of *Siam*, which is in a manner but one Peninsula, might be a very convenient Place of Intercourse to facilitate the Trade to the *Indies*, as it is the Frontier of two Seas, one on the East,

The Poverty and Slavery of the People.

Their Provision, and Doctrine of *Transmigration*.

The Conveniency of *Siam* for the Indian Trade.

1688.



The King
the only
Merchant
here.

side, which looks to *China*, *Japan*, *Tonquin*, *Cochinchina*, the Country of *Labor* and *Cambodia*; and the other on the West Side fronting the Kingdom of *Arracan*, the *Ganges*, the Coasts of *Caromandel* and *Malabar*, and the City of *Surat*: That the Merchandize of all these different Countries was brought every Year to *Siam*, which is the Place of Rendezvous, and a kind of Fair, where the *Siamese* make some Profit by the Sale of their Provisions: That the principal Revenue of the King consists in the Commerce which he carries on almost solely throughout the Kingdom; the only Produce of which is Rice, *Larec*, of which they make *Betel*, a little Pewter, some Elephants, which they sell, and some Skins of Fallow Deer, of which the Country is full: That the *Siamese* going in a manner naked, except a Linen Cloth which they wear from the Waist to the Mid-leg, they have no Manufacture of their own, but some Muslins, of which the Mandarins only have a Right to make themselves a sort of Waistcoats that they wear on Days of Ceremony: That when a Mandarin has been so Cunning as to raise a little Stock of Money, his best Way is to keep it conceal'd, otherwise the Prince will send for it: That nobody has a Foot of Land in the Kingdom,

all

all the Lands appertaining by Right to the King; which is the Reason that the greatest Part of the Soil lies fallow, nobody thinking it worth his while to cultivate Acres which will be taken from them as soon as they are in a good Case: That, in fine, the People are such good Husbands, that a private Man, who gets but fifteen or twenty Livres a Year, has more than is necessary for his Maintenance.

1688.

And the only landed Man.

The good Husbandry of the People.

THE King ask'd me likewise, what Sort of Money was current in Siam. Their Money, said I to him, is a round Bit of Silver like a Musket-Bullet, mark'd with two Siamese Letters; and this Bullet, which is the Prince's Coin, is call'd Tical, and worth forty French Sous. Besides the Tical, there's the half Tical, and another Sort of Money call'd Faon, worth about five Sous. As to their small Money, they make use of Shells of the Sea, which come from the Maldiv Islands, and of which, six Score amount to five Sous.

Their Money.

NOW, said the King, Let us talk of their Religion: Are there many Christians in the Kingdom of Siam? and does the King really think of embracing Christianity? Sire, said I to him, That Prince never entertain'd a Thought of it, nor durst any Mortal be so bold as to propose it to him. 'Tis true, that M. de

The Religion of the Court and Country.

1688. Chaumont, in the Speech which he made to him at his first Audience, mention'd Religion; but M. Constance, who officiated as an Interpreter, craftily suppress'd that Article; and the Apostolical Vicar, who was present, and understands the Siamese Language perfectly, took great Notice of it, but durst not speak of it, for fear of incurring the Displeasure of M. Constance; who, if he had but open'd his Lips about it, wou'd never have forgiven him.

The Craft
of the Prime
Minister.

THE King, surpriz'd at what I said, heard me very attentively. I added, that in the several Audiences which M. de Chaumont had during his Embassy, he always expatiated upon the Beauty of the Christian Religion; but that Constance, who was always the Interpreter, cunningly acted in two Characters, by telling the King of Siam what pleas'd him, and by making agreeable Answers to the Ambassador; so that nothing was resolv'd on the Part of the King, and on that of the Ambassador, but what M. Constance thought fit to suggest to both: That I had learn'd this Circumstance from the Apostolical Vicar himself, who was present at all their particular Conferences; and told it me as a great Secret. Upon this the King smil'd, and said, That it was a great Misfortune for Princes to be oblig'd

oblig'd to take every thing upon Trust 1688.
from their Interpreters, who are often
not so faithful as they shou'd be.

THEN the King ask'd me whether
the Missionaries did much Good at
Siam; and in particular, whether they
had converted many of the Siamese.

An Ac-
count of the
Missiona-
ries in Siam

*Not a Soul, Sir, said I; but as the greatest
Part of the Inhabitants is a Medley of
different Nations; and as among the
Siamese there's a great Mixture of Por-
tuguese, Cochinchinese, and Japonese
Christians, those honest Missionaries take
care of them, and administer the Sacra-
ments to them: They go from one Village
to another, and introduce themselves into
the Peoples Houses, on Pretence of prac-
tising Physick, and distributing small Re-
medies; yet all their Industry has not yet
produc'd any thing in Favour of Religion.
The most Service they do, is the baptising
of the Siamese Foundlings: For the Peo-
ple being very poor, bring up but few of
their Children, and think it no Crime to
expose the rest in the Fields; the baptising
of which Infants is all the Advantage pro-
duc'd by the Missions in this Country.*

WHEN I rose from the King's
Table, M. de Seignelay carry'd me into
his Closet, where he put a great many

The Count
closetted by
M. de Seig-
nelay.

Questions to me, especially in Matters
wherein the King's Interest was con-
cern'd, particularly whether there was

1688.

Who ask'd
him Ques-
tions relat-
ing to the
Commerce
of *Siam*.

any Hopes of establishing a considerable Trade at *Siam*, and what I thought were the Views of M. *Constance*, in the Fondness he shew'd for inviting the *French* thither. I satisfied him on this last Head, by giving him an ample Account of all that I knew of the *Siamese* Minister's Views and Designs.

As to the Article of Commerce, I told him, as I did the King, that as the Country produc'd nothing of its own, it could only be look'd upon as a Place of convenient Situation to facilitate the Commerce to *China*, *Japan*, and the other Kingdoms of the *Indies*: That this being the Case, the Establishment begun by sending Troops thither, was absolutely unnecessary, the Company having already there more than sufficient for that End. That as to the Fortrefs of *Bancock*, it would remain in the Hands of the *French* as long as the King of *Siam* and M. *Constance* liv'd; but that when either of them happen'd to die, the *Siamese*, solicited by their own Interest, and by the Enemies of *France*, would not fail to dislodge our Troops from a Place, which render'd them Masters of the Kingdom.

Two Days after this, the Cardinal *de Fanson* told me, that Father *de la Chaise* wanted to discourse me about the

1688.

the new Settlement of the *French* in the Kingdom of *Siam*. 'Cousin, said the

'Cardinal to me, take heed what you say, for you are going to talk with the craftiest Man in all the Kingdom. It gives me no Concern, said I, for I shall say nothing but the Truth.'

On that very Day I was introduc'd by the Back Stairs, and presented to his Reverence by Fryar *Vatable*.

THIS Reverend Father's Discourse turn'd almost wholly upon Religion, and the King of *Siam*'s Design to retain the Jesuits in his Dominions, by building a College and an Observatory for them at *Louvo*. I told him that M. *Constance* who was resolv'd, whatever it cost him, to obtain our King's Protection, had promis'd more than he could perform. That the Observatory and the College too would be built, perhaps, during the King of *Siam*'s Life, and that the Jesuits would be maintain'd there; but that whenever this Prince dies, the Government of *France* would be oblig'd to find out Funds for the Maintenance of the Missionaries, there being little Appearance that a new King would contribute to their Support.

WHEN Father *de la Chaise* had heard me talk thus, *Your Account*, said he, does not agree with Father *Tachard*'s. I reply'd,

Father *de la Chaise*'s Conference with our Author about the Jesuits at *Siam*.

About Father *Tachard*.

1688.  reply'd, That I had told him nothing but the naked Truth; that I did not know what Father *Tachard* had said, nor his Motives for saying it, but that his Friendship for M. *Constance*, who to attain to his own Ends, had left no Stone unturn'd to beguile him, might very well have blinded him, and consequently render'd his Accounts of Matters suspicious. That during the little Time he staid at *Siam* with M. *de Chaumont*, he was intirely in that Minister's Confidence; that upon some Occasions he had actually serv'd in the Quality of *French* Secretary, and that I myself had seen Warrants of that Father's own Hand-writing, sign'd by my Lord *Ambassador*, and underneath *Tachard*. At this the Reverend Father smiled, but instantly resuming that Gravity and Preciseness which generally sits upon his Countenance, he ask'd whether the Missionaries made great Improvement in this Kingdom.

About the
Missionaries,

And the
Talapoins.

I MADE the same Answer to him upon this Article as I had done to the King, adding, that what most of all retarded the Progress of the Gospel was the rigid and austere Life of the Talapoins: ' These Priests or Monks of the Country, said I, live in continual Abstinence, having nothing to subsist upon but the Charity which

1688.

' is distributed to them from Day to
 ' Day: What they receive beyond
 ' what is strictly necessary, they give
 ' to the Poor, and reserve nothing for
 ' the next Day. They never go out of
 ' their Monastery, but to beg Charity,
 ' for which they never open their Lips,
 ' but only hold out their Basket, which
 ' indeed is soon full; for the *Siamese*
 ' are very charitable. When the Tala-
 ' points go through the Town, they
 ' carry a Fan in their Hands, which
 ' they spread before their Faces, to
 ' prevent their seeing the Women; for
 ' they live in very strict Rules of Con-
 ' tinence, and never dispense with them
 ' but when they are determin'd to quit
 ' the Order and marry. The *Siamese*
 ' have neither publick Prayers nor Sa-
 ' crifices. The Talapoints assemble
 ' them sometimes in their Pagods,
 ' where they preach to them; and the
 ' common Subject of their Sermons is
 ' Charity, which is a Virtue highly re-
 ' commended all over the Kingdom,
 ' where you meet with few so poor as
 ' to be reduc'd to beg their Bread.

' THE Women here are naturally
 ' very Chaste; for the *Siamese* are
 ' pretty honest, and the Children are
 ' so submissive to their Parents, that
 ' they suffer themselves to be sold by
 ' their Parents, without repining, when
 ' they

The *Sia-*
mese Wo-
 men and
 Children.

1688.



‘ they are forc’d to it for Relief of their
 ‘ Necessities. This being the Case,
 ‘ there can be no Hopes of converting
 ‘ any *Siamese* to the Christian Religion:
 ‘ For besides that they are too stupid
 ‘ to be made easily sensible of the
 ‘ Nature of our Mysteries, and think
 ‘ their Morality more perfect than
 ‘ ours; they have not a due Esteem
 ‘ for our Missionaries, who do not
 ‘ live so austere as the Talapoins
 ‘ do.

Their silly
 Notions of
 a Deity and
 Paradise.

‘ WHEN our Priests go to preach
 ‘ the Truths of the Christian Religion
 ‘ at *Siam*, the silly People who are
 ‘ very docile, hearken to them as if
 ‘ they were telling them Fables or
 ‘ Tales to please Children. Their
 ‘ natural Complaisance inclines them to
 ‘ approve of any sort of Religion.
 ‘ According to them, Paradise is a
 ‘ great Palace, inhabited by the chief
 ‘ Sovereign, which has several Gates
 ‘ for all Nations to enter at, to serve
 ‘ the chief Sovereign according to his
 ‘ Occasions. They compare it to the
 ‘ King’s Palace, which has several
 ‘ Entries, and where every Mandarin
 ‘ has his particular Functions. ’Tis
 ‘ the same, say they, as to Heaven,
 ‘ the Palace of the Almighty, to
 ‘ which all Religions open like so many
 ‘ Gates, because all the Creeds of
 ‘ Man-

1688.

' Mankind, whatever they be, tend
 ' to honour the first Being, and refer
 ' to him, in some degree or other, more
 ' or less. The Talapoins never dis-
 ' pute with any body about Religion;
 ' and talk to them of the Christian,
 ' or any other Religion, they approve
 ' whatever you say of it: But when a
 ' Man offers to find Fault with their
 ' Religion, they answer coldly, *I have*
 ' *been so complaisant as to approve of*
 ' *your Religion, why do not you then*
 ' *approve of mine?* As to external
 ' Acts of Penance, and the Mortifica-
 ' tion of the Passions, it would not be
 ' proper to talk to them on those
 ' Points, because they are in those re-
 ' spects exemplary, and surpass our
 ' most rigid Fraternities by far, at
 ' least externally.

' BUT, Father, *said I*, the Jesuits
 ' never fail of Enemies in these Missions;
 ' for your Missionaries, who have su-
 ' perior Talents, easily ingratiate them-
 ' selves with the Princes, and obtain
 ' their Favour, for the Support of the
 ' Christian Religion; so that no wonder
 ' that Envy raises many Cabals amongst
 ' them not only in *Europe*, but also
 ' in the *Indies*.

' WHILE I stay'd at *Siam*, several
 ' Chinese of great Wit and Learning,
 ' confess'd to me, that they could not
 ' com-

1688.

‘ comprehend how People of one and
 ‘ the same Faith, who had left their
 ‘ native Country, and made long
 ‘ Voyages thro’ such vast Seas, could
 ‘ propose to convert Pagans, while
 ‘ they themselves were not agreed in
 ‘ their Conduct, some living with very
 ‘ great Modesty and Charity, and
 ‘ others abandoning themselves to
 ‘ Malice and Strife, to call it by no
 ‘ worse Name. This was the Lan-
 ‘ guage of all the *Chinese* with whom
 ‘ I talk’d. And ’tis a Truth so con-
 ‘ stant and notorious all over the *Indies*,
 ‘ that I not only thought it my Duty
 ‘ to inform you of it, but also to pub-
 ‘ lish it upon all Occasions.

The Au-
 thor's Ef-
 fects seiz'd
 by the Cus-
 tom-House
 Officers.

I HAD been for some Days at *Paris*,
 and not seeing the Carrier arrive from
Brest, I began to be uneasy for the
 Bales I had committed to his Care.
 In Order to know the Meaning of it
 I went to the Office, when I found
 what I had apprehended true to a
 Tittle. The Commissioners of the
 Custom-House at *Pontorson* had seized
 all my Effects there, and, not satisfy'd
 with the Seizure of them, on Pretence
 that I had in my Bales *India* Goods
 which were at that Time prohibited
 they condemned me to a Fine of Five
 Hundred *Livres*, for having contra-
 ven'd the King's Orders.

BEING

1688.



and their long could while d in very and to y no Lan- whom con- indies. Duty pub- Paris, from or the Care of it found to a f the seized tisfy'd etence Goods ibited f Five contra BEING

BEING much puzzled what to do, I at last thought it my best Way to have Recourse to M. *Ceberet*, who I knew was very well acquainted with the Farmers General. After informing him of the Disaster which had befallen me, I told him, that as I knew nothing of the King's Prohibition, I ought not to be punish'd for the Breach of it; that my Sincerity in my whole Conduct was sufficient to justify me, because I had myself declared to the Carrier the Quality of my Merchandize, and expressly specified the *Indian* Goods, which I shou'd not have done if I had thought they were prohibited. *Ceberet* gave me all the Encouragement that was in his Power; for he told me, that he knew the Farmers of the Customs, that they were very honest People, that I might go to them myself when there was a Board, and that he was sure they would give me Satisfaction.

ACCORDING to his Advice, I waited on those Gentlemen, complain'd of the Condemnation pass'd upon me, and made the best Use I cou'd of the Arguments I had urg'd to M. *Ceberet*. I insisted chiefly on my Sincerity, and demanded that, on that Consideration, they would order my Bales to be restor'd to me. Upon my Representation, they unanimously condemned what

His Complaint to the Farmers of the Revenue.

1688. what the Commissioners had done, with respect to the Merchandize which was not prohibited ; but as for the *Indian Goods*, they said they cou'd not release them, because of the Edict, by which they were prohibited ; but that I might apply to the King, who might be prevail'd on by my Interest, and that of my Friends, to give Orders for the Restitution of them.

AFTER this Consultation, I desired those Gentlemen to send their Orders to *Pontorson*, for the bringing all my Bales to their Office at *Paris*, and I declar'd that I was ready to pay, not only all the Duties, but the Charges of Carriage : Upon which *M. de Lulie*, who was President of the Assembly, immediately order'd a Letter to be writ to the Commissioners, and it was sign'd and seal'd in my Presence.

AFTER I went from the Office, I posted immediately to *M. Bontems* at *Versailles*, and, telling him what had happen'd, I desir'd him to speak of it to *M. le Pelletier* the Comptroller General of the Finances. *Bontems* stirr'd for me with his usual Zeal. The Minister, who had an Affection for him, said he cou'd refuse him nothing ; but that before he made any Order upon it, he thought it convenient to mention it to the King. His Majesty granted whatever

whate
the M
procur
me,
Gener
that al
ed to
stor'd
Duty.

I D
had r
Person
my Ba
myself
the O
overjo
me, t
caused
be ref
fair p
vantag
was e
Bontem
fail'd
ons th
been
appea
of th
As
take
was
Prote
sollici

whatever he desir'd of him, whereupon, the Minister to oblige M. *Bontems*, procur'd an Order to be dispatch'd for me, from the King to the Farmers General, enjoining them to take Care that all the Merchandize which belonged to the Chevalier *de Forbin*, was restor'd forthwith, without paying any Duty.

1688.

An Order
for their
being re-
stor'd.

I DID not mention the Favour I had receiv'd from Court to any one Person living; but when I heard that my Bales were arriv'd at *Paris*, I went myself and acquainted M. *Lulie* with the Order I had obtain'd. He was so overjoy'd at the Satisfaction it gave me, that he went to the Office and caused every Thing that was mine to be restor'd to me. Thus did this Affair prove, in the Issue, to my Advantage, for which good Success, I was obliged to the Friendship of M. *Bontems*, who, to do him Justice, never fail'd to exert himself upon all Occasions that I had to trouble him, as has been already observed, and as will appear, more than once, in the Sequel of these Memoirs.

As to this Friend of mine, I must take Notice, by the Way, that there was scarce a Man at Court, whose Protection was so useful, and so much solicited as his, because there were few

Character
of our Au-
thor's
Friend M.
Bontems.

of

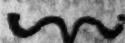
1688.

of the Nobility that had so much Interest. I might here mention a great many Things to his Advantage; but I pass them over in Silence, because they wou'd carry me to too great a Length: But I cannot omit one Thing, which sets him in a Rank above so many others of superior Birth, and that is his Zeal and sincere Attachment to the Person of the King, which had gain'd him such a Share of his Sovereign's Confidence, which he possess'd to the Day of his Death, that he obtain'd every Thing he ask'd; and, what is scarce to be parallel'd elsewhere, he always made so proper an Use of his Favour, that never any Person envy'd him; and he always took Care to employ his Interest to do Service, and never to hurt any Man whatsoever.

I SPENT the rest of this Year at *Paris*, where, some Months after my Arrival, we had an Account of the Enterprize of the Mandarin *Pitracha*, upon the Kingdom of *Siam*. Tho' I was not Witness of it, yet every Thing that pass'd on this Occasion has such a Connection with what has been already said, and so fully justifies, in the Event, all that I had predicted from the Alliance of the two Crowns, and from the Settlement of the *French* at *Bancock*, that I am persuaded the Reader will

be

1688.



be pleased with a short Account of what was the Success of this Enterprize, and how our Countrymen were oblig'd to abandon that Place in this Kingdom which was put into their Hands.

It was about the Middle of May 1688, that the Kingdom of *Siam*, which had been violently disturb'd for some Time, by Commotions that were the more dangerous, because they were concealed, became all at once the Theatre of a Revolution which alter'd the Face of the whole Country, and which, by extinguishing the whole Royal Family, was very fatal to all those who till then had the Management of Affairs, and in a Moment overturn'd every Step that had been taken, in regard to the Alliance with the *French*.

A Revolution at *Siam*.

I HAVE already observed, that tho' every Thing seem'd in a profound Tranquillity at *Siam*, there were but few of the Mandarins, but, from the Bottom of their Hearts, wish'd for a Change of Affairs. I discover'd that they hanker'd after a Revolution, while I stay'd at *Siam*, and I had the more Reason to be convinced of it, from the Affair of the *Sieur de Rouan*, in which we observed that the Mandarins were baulk'd in their Expectations, by the Care I took to vindicate *M. Constance*.

In

1688. In the Number of those that were capable of making the greatest Disturbance was the Mandarin *Pitracha*; a Man of Resolution, esteem'd by his Countrymen for his Courage, and respected for the Austerity of his Manners. This very Man form'd a Plot to shake off the Yoke, and to place himself upon the Throne.

The Character of the Mandarin who was the Author of the Revolution.

The Measures he took to effect it.

THIS Man, whom I knew perfectly well, was advanc'd in Years, but had all the Vigour of Youth; He conducted himself with so much Prudence and so artfully managed the People that, after he had engaged the *Talapoins* on his Side, he not only brought over the Mandarins, by flattering their Ambition, and promising them a Share in the Government, but the Populace too, who, being always fond of Novelty, hop'd for a milder Government under another Sovereign.

The Weakness of the Minister, in not preventing it when 'twas in his Power.

ALL his Wiles, however, were not so secret, but *Constance* had a Hint of them; and he might easily have prevented the Conspiracy: but whether it was owing to an ill-grounded Scruple that he had, of impeaching and arresting *Pitracha*, till he had sufficient Proof in his Hands to convict him, or whether he thought himself strong enough at any Time to suppress the Faction, he suffered the Affair to go

on too long. He perceived his Mistake 1688.
 when 'twas too late, and, in order to
 retrieve it the best he cou'd, he had
 Recourse to the *French* at *Bancock*.
 But my Countrymen, upon the false
 Accounts that were brought them of
 the Troubles, and of the Commotions at
 Court, being cautious of engaging in
 an Affair that might be attended with
 Consequences fatal to their own Nation,
 lay still in their Fort, notwithstanding
 M. *Constance* sent them Letters and
 Couriers, one upon the Heels of ano-
 ther, to conjure them to come to his
 Assistance.

His vain
 Importuni-
 ty with the
French to
 assist him.

WHEN I heard this Circumstance, I
 was so angry at the Behaviour of my
 Countrymen, that I cou'd not help
 saying to M. *Seignelay*, who told me
 the Story, that if I had been then at
Bancock, I wou'd have flown, without
 any Scruple, to the Assistance of M.
Constance, whatever Reason I had to
 complain of his ill Usage of me in
 other Respects. And, to speak the
 Truth, I have so mean an Opinion of
 the *Siamese* Valour, that, I am per-
 suaded, if I had gone to *Louvo* but
 with Fifty Men of my Garison, the very
 sight of me wou'd have been sufficient
 to have dispersed all the Populace, who
 wou'd have given up their Leader to
 me, without striking a Stroke, and been
 glad

Our Au-
 thor's Opi-
 nion of the
Siamese Va-
 lour, and of
 his own.

1688. glad to have appeased the Court by a speedy Submission.

The King of
Siam se-
cur'd, and
his Minister
clapp'd in
Irons

THE Succours there was Reason to expect from the *French* Garison, not coming in, and every Thing concurring to favour *Pitracha's* Undertaking, he made publick Declaration of his Design, put himself at the Head of the People, and then made himself Master of the King's Palace and Person. At the very first Rumour of this Step, *Constance* fled to the King, resolving to die in the Defence of him; but it was too late, for he himself was arrested and clapp'd in Irons.

The Usur-
per's Treat-
ment of his
Royal Pri-
soner.

PITRACHA, to render his Usurpation the less odious, imagining that the King, whose Distemper increased every Day, had not long to live, not only forbore any Manner of Insult upon the Person of his Prince, after he had made him his Prisoner, but taking upon him no higher Quality than that of a great Mandarin, he issued no Orders but in the Name of the King, to whom he made no Scruple to leave all the exterior Part of Sovereignty.

As every Thing had hitherto succeeded to the Usurper's Wish, so the Consequences prov'd altogether as favourable; The several Orders of the State having submitted to his Dominion, nothing remained for him, but to drive

the
he n
in P
them
only
ting
perce
in F
sensib
little
Const
spar'
know
ward
his T
ado,
he so
W
to, is
Siam
he sup
the Se
Coura
standi
me, I
to bel
tance
and fu
nius a
greater
world
Happy
Qualit

1688.



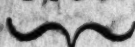
the *French* out of the Kingdom, that he might reap the Fruit of his Crimes in Peace. He was afraid of none but them, and, in short, they were the only People that were capable of putting a Spoke in his Wheel; but he soon perceived that he had no need to stand in Fear of them. When he was made sensible how weak they were, and how little they car'd what became of M. *Constance*, whose Life he had only spar'd till then, because he did not know how the *French* were affected towards him, he first stript him of all his Treasure, and then, without more ado, rid his Hands of an Enemy that he so much hated.

His Minister put to Death.

WHAT Kind of Death he put him to, is not known. They who were at *Siam* during the Revolution, say, that he supported all these Misfortunes with the Sentiments of a Christian, and the Courage of a Hero. And, notwithstanding the many ill Turns he did to me, I frankly own that I am inclined to believe their Report. For M. *Constance* had a Soul that was great, noble, and sublime, and such a superior Genius as enabled him to conduct the greatest Projects to an Issue, with a world of Prudence and Sagacity. Happy *Constance*! if all these great Qualities had not been clouded over by

His Behaviour under his Misfortunes, and his Character.

1688.



gross Defects, especially by a boundless Ambition, by insatiable Avarice, often even to a Degree of Sordidness, and by a Jealousy, which, taking Fire on the least Occasions, render'd him harsh, cruel, implacable, insincere, and capable of the most hateful Things in Life.

The King's Death, and the Proclamation of the Usurper.

The French at *Banck* return home.

THE King died in a few Days after his Minister, and *Pitracha* was with one Voice acknowledged King of *Siam*. And, to compleat his Happiness, our Countrymen, after a Siege of some Months, in which they suffer'd all that Men cou'd do in their Circumstances, were obliged to abandon *Banck*, and return with their melancholy Remnants to *France*, where we saw in what Pickle they arriv'd. This was all our Nation gain'd by that ill-concerted Undertaking, which tho' very expensive, cou'd be of no Advantage to the Kingdom, and which the Court was meerly wheedled into by Promises that were specious in Appearance, but had no solid Foundation.

Revolution in *England*.

SOON after this Revolution, there happen'd one in *England*, which entirely chang'd the Face of Affairs in *Europe*. Every body knows what pass'd in this great Turn, so that I shall say but two Words about it, just as much as is necessary for the understanding

stand
of h
T
a lo
at th
to th
Seco
Prin
lish'
time
mish
it th
min
no St
they
Holla
Oran
of G
them
T
so sec
The
Gener
in or
thing
cance
had
make
who
frustra
with
of the

standing of what I am to take Notice of hereafter. 1688.

THE Protestants of *England* had for a long time conceiv'd violent Umbrage at the Protection which was granted to the Catholics by King *James* the Second. They were afraid that this Prince, after having by degrees abolish'd the several Acts passed at sundry times against the Members of the *Romish* Communion, wou'd at last make it the prevailing Religion of his Dominions. But being resolv'd to leave no Stone unturn'd to ward off this Blow, they privately sent a Deputation to *Holland*, to treat with the Prince of *Orange*, and to offer him the Kingdom of *Great Britain*, if he wou'd protect them.

THIS Proceeding cou'd not be kept so secret, but *France* had Advice of it. The King complain'd of it to the *States General*, who dissembling the Matter, in order to gain Time, return'd nothing but loose Answers of no Significance. The Prince of *Orange*, who had been long contriving a Scheme to make himself King of *England*, and who saw all his Hopes just ready to be frustrated, because the Queen was big with Child, hearken'd to the Proposals of the Deputies, and made all the necessary

1688. cessary Preparations underhand for his Enterprize.

As he had need of the Seven United Provinces, and several Princes of *Germany* to support him, he engag'd them so warmly in his Party, that they assisted him with all their Forces, and were not afraid even to expose their own Dominions to Danger, by sending the Troops which protected them, to his Support. All things being ready, the Prince put to Sea with a numerous Fleet, and hoisted the Flag of *England*, with this Inscription, *For Religion and Liberty*.

AFTER some cross Accidents, which only hinder'd his Sailing for a few Days, he landed safely at *Dartmouth* and *Torbay*; where he was receiv'd by the People as a Deliverer sent them from Heaven. *London*, the Country, and the Armies both by Sea and Land, all declar'd for him. The King then seeing it dangerous for him to stay, fled from the Storm, and went over to *France*, waiting for better Days to return to *England*, and to assert his Right Sword in Hand. Thus was that great Revolution brought about, which occasion'd a War, that was immediately declar'd by the King of *France* against the Emperor and the *Dutch*.

By

1689.

By reason of this new War, there were few of the Officers that wanted Employment. I waited on M. de Seignelay, who sent me to *Dunkirk*, where I had a Frigate of sixteen Guns given me to cruise with in the Channel. I had been at Sea for some Days, when the Governor of *Calais* sent me Word, that the *Spaniards* having declar'd War against us, I might stop all the Ships of that Nation which I met with. Next Day I met with four small *Ostenders*, in the Rear of a Fleet of *English* Merchant-men. I stop'd them without any Difficulty; and as they did not know that we were at War with *Spain*, they suffer'd themselves to be carry'd into *Dunkirk*, where they were confiscated to the King.

The Count sent from *Dunkirk* to cruise in the *English* Channel.

Takes four *Ostend* Prizes.

I SAIL'D again not many Days after with the *Sieur John Bart*, Captain of a small Frigate of twenty-four Guns. We had Orders to convoy some Ships laden for the King's Account to the Port of *Brest*. Besides my Crew, which consisted of One hundred and twenty Men, I put on board One hundred Soldiers at *Dunkirk*, who were also to be carry'd to *Brest*.

In our Passage, a *Dutch* Privateer of fourteen Guns came to take a View of us, which I gave Chase to, and overtook. Her Imprudence was the Reason

1689.

His Fight
with a
Dutch Pri-
vateer.

son that she lost above half of her Crew: For when she saw that I was going to board her, she nail'd down her Hatches, to the End that the Crew, having no Hopes of their Escape, might be oblig'd to defend themselves to the last Extremity.

WE had no sooner boarded her, but one of the most bloody Battles ensu'd that I ever saw. The Fellows fought like Madmen; so that their Deck was instantly cover'd with dead Bodies: At the Sight of which, I leap'd into the Ship to put an end to the Slaughter, else there had not been a Man left alive, so exasperated were my Men at the Resistance they met with.

HAVING convoy'd our Ships to *Brest*, we sail'd to *Havre de Grace*; where we learn'd that War was declar'd against the *English*. The Orders we had upon this Occasion to attack them, were the Cause of a very bold Action that happen'd not many Days after, in which the Reader will find, by what follows, we had ill Success.

AT our Arrival in the Harbour, we found twenty Merchant Ships ready to sail: They desir'd our Convoy, and we readily granted it. When we came over-against the Isle of *Wight*, we were chas'd by two *English* Ships of fifty Guns. The Weather was fair, and the

the S
Whe
down
sider
surest
and,
possib
other
of the
Enem
conve
Bart,
and g
theref
but t
us, it
the R
migh
carry
men:
call'd
an Ev
out w
by sta
I A
my A
of str
give
contri
Court
done,
Merc
Crews

1689.

the Sea very calm, little Wind stirring. When we saw these two Ships bearing down upon the Fleet, *Bart* and I consider'd what Course to take. The surest Way was to abandon the Fleet; and, to speak the Truth, it was hardly possible for us to save our Ships by any other Means. Nevertheless, in spite of the Danger we ran in facing the Enemy, I thought it by no Means convenient to fly. I represented to *Bart*, that indeed, our Ships were light, and good Sailors; and that we might therefore easily escape if we wou'd; but that tho' this wou'd certainly save us, it wou'd as certainly expose us to the Reproach of Mankind: That we might be sure these two Ships wou'd carry away above half of our Merchantmen: That we shou'd infallibly be call'd to an Account for so unhappy an Event; and, that it wou'd be given out we might have prevented the Loss, by standing in our Defence.

I ADDED, that if he wou'd follow my Advice, we wou'd run the Hazard of striking a bold Stroke, which wou'd give us a Reputation, and infallibly contribute to advance our Affairs at Court: That the only thing to be done, was to arm two of the biggest Merchant Ships, and to strengthen the Crews, by taking Sailors out of other

1689.



The Au-
thor's En-
gagement
with some
English
Ships.

Ships: That with this Reinforcement, we wou'd go and attack the two *English* Ships, if they continued to give us Chase: That he and I wou'd board the Commodore, while the two Merchant-men kept the other employ'd, by cannonading him: And, in fine, that if we were so happy as to take the Ship that we engag'd, we wou'd make use of her for the Attack of the second, which then cou'd hardly escape us. He approv'd of my Arguments. We attack'd and boarded the *English* Ship; but by Misfortune, *Bart* mistook in Boarding her, which I perceiv'd, and saw plainly that we shou'd be taken; but I chose to run the Risque of my Life, rather than fly from my Colours. The Soldiers and Sailors of our Frigates, that cou'd not enter into the Enemy's Ship, ply'd the Head of her with Gunshot and Grenado's.

I FLATTER'D myself for some time with the Hopes, that either the Tide or the Wind wou'd favour our Boarding. But this Remedy quickly fail'd us, by the Cowardice of the two Merchant-men, who abandon'd us, instead of Fighting, as they had promis'd: Upon which, the other Ship came to his Companion's Assistance; so that then we were by no means a Match for them: But tho' we saw very plainly, that it

: 2912

2 M

was

was
escap
migh
or al
altog
IT
Hou
than
Two
Live
whic
were
on.
for I
Vale
dang
a gre
to b
up a
wou
staun
T
man
with
but
by t
how
Sailo
foll
cern
wen
Mer
took

1689.

was in a manner impossible for us to escape, we still fought, that the Fleet might have the more Time to get away, or at least that they might not have altogether so cheap a Conquest.

It was a bloody Fight for two long Hours ; which is much more Time than is requisite to board a Vessel: Two-thirds of my Crew had lost their Lives, and I had receiv'd six Wounds, which were not so dangerous as they were troublesome ; yet we still fought on. I went off of Deck to be dress'd, for I lost a great deal of Blood. My Valet de Chambre, who thought me dangerously wounded, follow'd me with a great Lamentation, but I threaten'd to break his Head, if he did not get up again upon Deck and fight on, as I wou'd do as soon as my Blood was staunch'd.

THE Crew having nobody to command them, and seeing the Deck strew'd with dead Bodies, thought of nothing but flying. My Footman, who was by this time got upon Deck, perceiving how they stood affected, and seeing six Sailors getting off in the Sloop, he follow'd them, and without being concern'd at the Condition he left me in, went with them aboard one of the Merchant Ships of the Fleet, which took him in.

His Footman runs away from him.

1689.

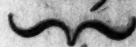
The Count
surrenders.

Is strip'd.

Carry'd to
Plymouth.

WHILE I was thus mortify'd, *Bart* fared no better. The greatest Part of his Men had been kill'd or wounded; and he himself had receiv'd a Wound in his Head. At last, when we saw it was in vain to hold out any longer, we yielded our two Frigates, and went on board the Enemy's Ship. The Captain of her was kill'd. The Purser took care of my Wounds. I had a handsome Suit of Cloaths on, which with the rest of my Goods, the Crew soon accommodated themselves with, and they strip'd me as bare as my Hand. Instead of a Shirt they gave me a Waistcoat, and a great Pair of Breeches, with a Hole on the left Buttock. A Seaman pull'd off his Shoes to give them to me, and another gave me a sorry Cap.

BART had better Luck than I; for because he spoke *English* a little, they did not strip him. While I was in this fine Trim, we were carry'd to *Plymouth*, where the Governor made a great Entertainment for us. As my Name was known, notwithstanding the ridiculous Figure I made, I was honour'd with an Elbow-Chair at the upper End of the Room. I can hardly forbear smiling, whenever I think of the Contrast there was between the Post of Honour I was seated in upon that Occasion, and the



the Garb in which I was equip'd. However, I was not then so merrily dispos'd; for I was too sensible of the Governor's Unkindness, whose Civility extended no farther than this single Repast.

Tho' he saw I was in want of every thing, he had not the good Nature so much as to give me a Shirt; and the Officers who din'd with us, among whom were several *Frenchmen*, whose Names I spare to mention, for fear of putting them to the Blush, were as ungenerous as he. I was so provok'd at this Treatment from the one and from the other, that after having taken a little Food, I gave the Governor to understand, that I wanted Rest more than any thing else, and desir'd him to let me have a Room where I might not be disturb'd. He took such Pity of me, that he sent me with *Bart*, to a Tavern, where he kept us under a strong Guard.

As soon almost as I came to the Place, I went to Bed, musing upon my Misfortune; but I had scarce lain down, when Word was brought that a Man wanted to speak with me. I rose up to see who it was, and was immediately surpriz'd with a Visit from *Romieu* the Goldsmith, the very Man to whom, when I was at *Marseilles*, I gave the

His Complaint of his Usage by the Governor, and his own Countrymen.

He is visited in his Confinement by *Romieu* the Goldsmith, now a Refugee from *Marseilles*, for the sake of Religion.

1689.



the Silver-hafted Forks that I filch'd from my Brother.

THE King's Edicts against the *Hugonots*, had drove the good old Man over to *England*. I was overjoy'd to see him, and call'd him by his Name. He knew me, and with Tears in his Eyes, said, *As soon as I heard you was come hither, I left every thing to come and embrace you. What gives me the greatest Pain is, that I am not able to relieve you in your present unhappy Plight. I have been forc'd to leave Marseilles on account of my Religion. I have lost all my Estate, and am forc'd to serve in a Shop to get my Bread. Don't trouble yourself, said I, I know you are a generous Soul; and what you wou'd do for me if it was in your Power: And I thank you. But since the Disorder of your Affairs does not permit you to assist me with your own Purse, don't you know some Merchant here that wou'd lend me a little Money upon your Credit? He will certainly be no Loser by it; for I will pay him by a Bill in any Part of France he shall name. After a Moment's Pause, he told me that he had a Friend to apply to, and that he wou'd see what he cou'd do for me.*

He supplies
the Count
with Mo-
ney.

IN short, in two Hours time he brought me one *Ouvardin*, a Merchant, who offer'd to let me have what Mo-

ney

1689.

ney I pleas'd for a Bill of Exchange of the like Sum payable to *M. le Gendre at Roan*. This was all I wanted; and immediately I drew a Bill for five hundred Crowns upon *M. de Louvigny*, the Intendant at *Havre de Grace*; of which Bill I only took twenty Crowns for the Score at the Tavern; and having desir'd the *Sieur Ourvarin* to bespeak me some Shirts and other wearing Apparel, I receiv'd a Note for the rest.

THE Day after I came to *Plymouth*, I wrote to *M. de Seignelay* a full Account of all that had happen'd, and as I did not know what Construction the Court might pass upon our Adventure, I took care to omit nothing that might serve to clear up our Characters.

The Count
writesto *M.
de Seigne-
lay at Paris*,

I HAD so much Time upon my Hands for the greatest Part of the Day, and sometimes too in the Night, that I studied which Way to extricate myself out of my present Condition. I thought that the Protection of the *Marshal de Schomberg*, who was come over to *England* on account of Religion, might be of some Service to me. I directed my Letter to him at *London*, and desir'd he wou'd make Interest for my being brought thither, that I might be nearer at hand to negotiate my Exchange.

And to the
*Marshal de
Schomberg
at London*.

HE

1689.



HE sent me for Answer, That he was glad of an Opportunity to oblige me, and that he wou'd speak about it to the King. I know not whether he was so good as his Word; perhaps he did me that Service; but I did not give time for the Effect of it. My Impatience to be at Liberty, my Dread of the Delays that always accompany Exchanges, which are seldom made at the Term fix'd, together with the Hardships we were like to suffer from the Governor of *Plymouth*, who still refus'd to let us out upon our Parole of Honour, determin'd, both *Bart* and myself, to contrive some way or other for our Escape.

The Count
contrives
his Escape.

A FAIR Opportunity soon presented. An *Ostend* Seaman, who was related to *Bart*, having the Steerage of a little Vessel, was oblig'd to put in at *Plymouth*. He came to see us; we acquainted him with our Scheme, and I offer'd him Four hundred Crowns for my own Part, if he would befriend us. This Sum made him prick up his Ears, and perfectly secur'd him in our Interest. The first thing he did was of great Service to us, for he brought us a File to saw off the Iron Bars of our Window. I fil'd one of 'em so cleverly that it scarce held together; and that my Craft might not be detected, I

cover'd

cover'd it as well as I cou'd with 1689.
chew'd Bread which I mix'd with Soot. 

IN the mean time my Wounds began to heal, by the Care of the Governor's own Surgeon, who was a *Fleming*, and long'd to go to *France*, but could not for want of Money; therefore we brought him into our Plot. We also engag'd in our Design a couple of Swabbers that were set to attend us, and who could not fail being of great Service to us, because of the Liberty they had to go abroad whenever they pleas'd.

THERE was nothing wanting now but a Ship to carry us off. The *Offender* would have given us his with all his Heart; but the Vessel was not entirely at his Disposal, and what was still worse, was, that we should have been under a Necessity of admitting too many People into the Secret.

WHILE we were considering what to do next, the Swabbers, who, in hopes of a Gratuity, were very diligent to serve us, came to tell us, in a great hurry one Night, after we had been Eleven Days in Prison, that it was in our own Power to make our Escape, and that they had provided every thing that was necessary for the Purpose. That they had found a Wherry or Yawl of *Norway*, with nobody aboard but

1689. but the Waterman dead drunk, whom they had remov'd into another small Vessel hard by, and then carry'd the Wherry to a certain Nook of the Harbour, where we might embark in the Night-time without being seen.

INDEED I thought it was not possible for a better Opportunity to offer, and so did *Bart*, upon which without Loss of Time, when the Surgeon came to dress me, I bad him find out the *Ostend* Pilot, and charge him, from me, to furnish the Boat which the Swabbers would shew him, with Bread, Cheese, Beer, a Sea-Compass, a Pair of Compasses, and a Sea-Chart, to prepare every thing without the least Noise, and then to come and give us Notice much about Midnight. For a Signal, he was to throw a Stone at our Window. Every thing was punctually perform'd, and as soon as they had given the Signal, I broke off the fil'd Bar, and tying the Sheets of our Bed together, we made ready to get down.

The Count's
Escape.

BEFORE we went, I wrote two Letters which I left on my Table, one for the Governor, thanking him for all his Civilities, and promising to do as much for him when Opportunity serv'd, and the other for the *Sieur Ouvarin*, in which after expressing my Gratitude for the good Offices he had done

done
Land
the B
had e
to M
be pa
W
our E
tenan
and v
off w
Arm,
Fello
cover
order
that i
Franco
procu
that l
easily
favour
amusi
and
audib
were
speak
Bart
Swab
'T
when
the L
so gr
on bo

1689.



done me, I desired him to pay my Landlord the Score I had run up at the Bar, to make a Bill of what he had expended for me, and to send it to *M. le Gendre*, that the whole might be paid off without delay.

WHEN every thing was ready for our Escape, I took leave of my Lieutenant, who was our Fellow-Prisoner, and would have been glad of going off with us ; but having only one Arm, and being a swinging great Fellow, he would infallibly have discover'd us, if he had attempted it. In order to make him easy, I assur'd him that if we were so happy as to get to *France*, I wou'd use all my Interest to procure his Liberty. When he saw that his Escape was impracticable, he easily consented to tarry, and even favour'd us as much as possible, by amusing our Guards while we made off, and by talking to himself with an audible Voice for a long time after we were gone, as if he was all the while speaking to us. When we were got down, *Bart* and I, the Surgeon and the two Swabbers embark'd in the Yawl.

'Tis such a Satisfaction to a Man when he is got out of a Prison, that the Danger which follows, be it never so great, goes for nothing. We went on board this little Vessel with as much Secu-

1689.

Security as if it had been an Admiral's Ship. We found but two Oars in her, or rather an Oar and a Sculler. As my Wounds were still bleeding, I was not in a Condition to row, so that I was Steersman while *Bart* took the Oar, and one of the Swabbers the Sculler. In this manner we scudded through the Road in the Middle of Twenty Ships, the Men aboard calling out on all Sides to us, *Whither bound?* to which *Bart* made answer, *That we were Fishermen.*

His Arrival
on the Coast
of *Bretagne*.

THE Danger added Wings to our Flight. We sail'd two Days and a Half in the Channel with very fair Weather, and a Mist which favour'd our Escape. *Bart* row'd all the Way with indefatigable Vigour, hardly giving himself time to take a Morfel of Food; and at last we arrived on the Coast of *Bretagne*, after having run Sixty-four Leagues in less than Forty-eight Hours.

EARLY in the Morning we landed six Leagues from *St. Malo*, near a Village call'd *Harqui*. As we went ashore, we were visited by a Brigade of six Men, who were commanded to patrol along the Coast, and to stop those that were flying for Refuge to *England* on account of Religion. One of those Soldiers who was formerly a Serjeant on board

1689.



board a Ship, and knew me very well, came up to me, and after passing a Compliment, said, *Oh! Sir, how glad am I to see you! It was reported you was dead.* And indeed it was generally believ'd, because my Footman that ran away from me, had given People to understand by his Talk, that I was dead of my Wounds: For my eldest Brother, a Captain of a Ship, that was sent out to get Intelligence, meeting with the Merchant Man that had taken my Mariners on board, did not doubt, from the Report that was made to him of the Condition I was left in, but I was actually dead. The Marshal *d'Estrees* who then commanded at *Brest*, would fain have had my Footman punished for thus leaving me: But after his Examination, the Circumstances of his Escape appear'd so favourable, that he was acquitted and dismiss'd.

WHEN I arriv'd at *St. Malo*, several Merchants hearing how I had been distressed'd, came and offer'd me their Purse, and all the Service they could do me. I thank'd them for their Generosity, and taking only Twenty Lewid'ors from *M. Dugue*, Commissioner of the Navy at that Station, I set out Post for Court: But *Bart*, who was of a timorous Disposition, fearing that our Manage-

The Favours done him at *St. Malo*.

Set out Post for *Paris*; but *Bart* stays behind.

1689. Management had thrown us under Dis-
 pleasure, would not accompany me
 but was glad to let me go first to feel
 their Pulses.

I took *Dunkirk* in my Way to *Havre*
de Grace, where I saw M. *de Louvigni*
 the Intendant, to whom I spoke con-
 cerning the Bill of Exchange I had
 drawn upon him for Five hundred
 Crowns, which he promised me to pay
 as soon as it was presented to him.
 Upon this I went through *Roan* to see
 M. *le Gendre*, to whom I deliver'd the
 Bill I had from the *Sieur Ourvarin*, de-
 siring him to settle every thing to the
 Satisfaction of that Merchant, who
 had done me this Service with so good
 a Grace. I told him that for this end
 he had nothing to do but to apply to
 M. *de Louvigni*, who would pay him
 all the Money due according as it had
 been agreed on by us.

His Wel-
 come by
 Cardinal
Fanson.

FROM *Roan* I went to *Paris*, where
 my first Care was to wait on the Car-
 dinal *de Fanson*, to know what the Court
 thought of our Adventure, and of the
 Loss of two of the King's Ships. The
 good old Cardinal, who was but just
 return'd from *Versailles*, shouted for
 Joy when he first set his Eyes on me,
 ran to embrace me, and declar'd how
 glad he was to see me come to Life
 again,

1689.



again, and deliver'd from my Prison
in *England*.

I KNEW by the Reception he gave me, that the Court was not dissatisfy'd with us; however, I put the proper Questions to him. 'Cousin, *said he*, 'you may go without fear of any thing; M. *de Seignelay* receiv'd your Letter, and went this very Morning to read it to the King. The Court is very well pleas'd both with you and M. *Bart*: The Sacrifice you made of your Persons, and the Danger you expos'd your selves to for the Preservation of the Fleet, have charm'd both the King and the whole Court. You have no need of me. Go with Courage to the Minister of the Marine, and depend upon a hearty Reception.

TRANSPORTED at this News, I waited on M. *de Seignelay*; I was scarce enter'd the Hall, but the Valet de Chambre, who stood at the Door of his Closet to tell his Master the Names of all Comers, ran in a Hurry to acquaint him that I was there. *What art turn'd Fool?* said the Minister to him, *the Chevalier de Forbin is a Prisoner in England, and not in my Antichamber.* The Valet assured his Master that he knew me very well, and persisted that I was the Man.

And by M.
de Seigne-
lay.

THE

1689.

THE Minister, willing to be satisfy'd with his own Eyes, came out of his Closet, and seeing me actually standing before him, *From whence came you?* said he; I told him I was come from *England: But how the Devil came you away?* reply'd the Minister; *Through the Window, my Lord,* said I, at which he fell a laughing.

THEN he was desirous to know the Circumstances of our Escape, of which I gave him a particular Account, and perceiving that the Narrative pleas'd him, and that he was highly satisfy'd with my Conduct, I desir'd him to let me have wherewithal to take my Revenge. At these Words he look'd upon me again with a Smile, and rising up without making me any Answer, carry'd me directly to the King, who wanted to be inform'd of our whole Adventure.

And by the
King.

I HAD scarce made an End of speaking, when the Minister addressing himself to his Majesty, said, *Sire, the very first Words of the Chevalier, were a Request to me to enable him to take his Revenge. What does he mean by Revenge?* said the King to me. *Sire,* said I, *what I mean by it is this, that as your Majesty's Ships are superior to the Enemy's and much better built, if I had had the Advantage to command a Fifty-Gun Ship*

I should
Englis
This S
Seigne
my Co
agreea
NEE
as he
in his
him do
valier,
Ship,
as a
Losses.
News,
which
had rec
repret
was tak
ook'd
ut tha
member
mander
e had
signelay
ut afte
ent on
ver.
AFT
y the I
y Ach
be
aited
VOL.

I should have infallibly taken the Two English Ships which made us Prisoners. 1689.

This Saying was very pleasing to M. de Seignelay, and could scarce have made my Court to him in a Manner more agreeable.

NEXT Day I put myself in his Way as he return'd from the King; being in his Chair, he order'd his Men to set him down, and said to me, *M. le Chevalier, the King has made you Captain of a Ship, and gives you Four hundred Crowns as a Gratification, to indemnify your Losses.* Being charm'd with this good News, I thank'd him for his Protection, which I acknowledg'd the Favour I had receiv'd was owing to: And then represented to him, that as no Notice was taken of the *Sieur John Bart*, it look'd as if the Court had forgot him, but that however he deserv'd to be remember'd; that he was my Commander, and that on the late Occasion he had merited as much as I. *M. de Seignelay* listen'd to me attentively; but after having drawn up his Glasses, went on without making me any Answer.

AFTER this last Favour granted me by the King, I was not willing to defer my Acknowledgments, and in order to be introduc'd to his Majesty, I waited on *M. de Luxembourg*, the Captain

1689.

tain of the Guards then upon Duty. When I had acquainted him of the Reason why I wanted to speak with his Majesty, he made a very obliging Offer to accompany me. I represented to him, as we went along, that the Court had forgot to gratify M. Bart, a Soldier of Fortune indeed, but a Man of distinguish'd Valour, and who ought not to pass unrewarded. I added, that if he wou'd please to honour him with his Protection, and second my Motion, I wou'd take the Liberty to mention him to the King. The Marshal, charm'd with my Generosity, embrac'd me, and with a Complaisance in his very Looks, said to me: *You need only speak one Word in Bart's Favour; I'll do the rest, never fear.*

THE King was going abroad that very Morning to Mass. I thank'd him for his Favours, and he made Answer in these Words, *You need only continue to serve me, I'll take Care of you.* I answer'd,

The Count's
Recommendation of
Bart to the
King.

with a profound Reverence, *I beg Leave, Sire, to acquaint your Majesty, that you seem to have forgot the Sieur Bart, a Man of Merit, that deserves to be rewarded, and who, in this last Action, serv'd your Majesty with as much Zeal and Valour as I did.* Sire, added M. de Luxemburg, *what the Chevalier says, is true. Bart is a Man of good Reputation.*

The

1689.



The King stop'd, and turning towards M. de Louvois, who was by him, *The Chevalier de Forbin, says he, has done a Thing that's truly generous, of which my Court scarce affords an Example.*

NEXT Day I waited on M. de Seignelay, who, as soon as he set Eyes on me, ran to embrace me, saying, *Oh! Sir, you have carry'd your Point; The King has order'd me to treat M. Bart and you alike; What you did yesterday gave me a sensible Pleasure. 'Twas even braver and a more generous Action than when you expos'd your Life for the Preservation of the Fleet.* Then while he was in that good Humour, I pray'd him to remember my Lieutenant, whom I had left a Prisoner at *Plymouth.* I

His Recommendation of his Lieutenant.

added, that he was a brave Man, that he had served his Majesty well, and that he ought not to be pass'd by. *You are a generous Soul, said the Minister to me, you forget nobody.*

WHILE I was thus making Interest for my Friends, I found generous People that did the like for me, and thought me worthy of their Regard. Madame Rouillet, the Lady whose Coral I sold at *Batavia*, had been told of my Adventure. As soon as she heard I was in *Paris*, she came to see me, and offered me Two hundred Pistoles, as a present, which she wou'd force me to

Madam Rouillet's Generosity to the Count.

1689. take. I know, said she, that you are just come out of a Prison, and that you have been stript of all, even to the very Cloaths upon your Back ; I beseech you take this Sum ; You gain'd Two thousand Crowns for me by my Coral, which I did not dream of ; what I offer you by Way of Acknowledgment for the Service you have done me, is not too much. I was so charm'd with this Lady's Generosity, that, without offering to touch her Money, which I had no Occasion for, heartily thank'd her, and begg'd her to preserve me in her Esteem, assuring her that I shou'd for ever remember the Kindness she did me the Honour to shew to me.

The Count's
Departure
to his Post
at Brest,
and M. de
Seignelay's
Advice to
the Officers
for their
Behaviour.

ALL my Affairs at *Paris* being settled to my Heart's Content, I set out for *Brest*, to serve there, under my Brother in Quality of Second Captain ; and M. de *Seignelay* arriv'd there not long after to command the Forces. I had the Satisfaction to find that he propos'd me to the Officers as a Pattern, and publicly applauded the Generosity of my Intercession in favour of *Bart*, whom the Court had forgot. He desired them all to follow my Steps as Occasion serv'd, and exhorted the Officers to suppress that mean Spirit of Envy, which prevailed so much in the Navy, and which

put
another
IN
Arriv
Dutch
soon
the S
broug
inforc
and c
ing t
but t
agree
retir'd
Louis
W
the Li
for M
no De
as a g
to kno
away,
pose.
HE
the Sh
we let
where
when h
who a
answere
in the
English
nobody



put them continually upon doing one another ill Offices.

IN a few Days after M. *de Seignelay's* Arrival, the Fleet of the *English* and *Dutch* appeared off of *Brest*; but they soon disappeared upon the Arrival of the Squadron which M. *de Tourville* brought from *Provence*. With this Reinforcement the King's Fleet put to Sea, and cast Anchor before *Belle Isle*, waiting there some Time for the Enemy; but the latter not appearing, it was agreed to unrig. Some of the Ships retir'd to *Brest*, and the others to *Port Louis* and *Rochefort*.

WHEN I arrived at *Brest*, I found the Lieutenant whom I left at *Plymouth*; for M. *de Seignelay*, at my Request, made no Delay to release him; which I took as a great Obligation. Being desirous to know what passed there after I came away, I went to him for that Purpose.

HE told me, that after he had drawn the Sheets into the Window, by which we let ourselves down, he went to Bed, where he lay very quiet till next Day, when he was rous'd by the Corporal, who asking him where we were, he answered him very coldly that we were in the other Room; whereupon the *Englishman* going into it, and seeing nobody there, he cried out, *They are*

A Narrative of what passed at *Plymouth*, when they found that the Count was escap'd.

1686. *not here, they have certainly made their Escape.*

UPON this, continued the Lieutenant, I pretended to be surpriz'd, and complain'd of your ill Treatment of me, and of your Cruelty in not making me a Sharer of your good Fortune. They ask'd me several Questions about you, particularly whether I did not know which Way you were gone. The treacherous Knaves, said I, told me not a Word of their Design. All I know is, that Bart, as he fitted on a new Pair of Shoes two Days ago, look'd upon them when they were on his Feet, and said they were special Shoes for a March. The Lieutenant added, that the Governour was so nettled with the Letter I left for him, that he immediately sent Horsemen in Quest of us.

WHEN I heard him say this, continued the Lieutenant, I cou'd not help laughing in my Sleeve at the Simplicity of those credulous Gentlemen, to believe what I told 'em, and to put themselves to the Expence of pursuing you by Land, while you were at Sea. When the Lieutenant had ended his Narrative, I again embraced him, and, for his Part, he thought he cou'd not sufficiently express his Acknowledgments to me, for the Care I had taken, so soon to procure his Return.

As

As soon as I had un-rigg'd at *Brest*, 1689.
 as I said just now, I hated to be idle,
 and therefore resolved to go a cruising. He goes a
 I went on Board a Pink named, *The Mar-*
seillian, a very good Sailor, and took
 for my Officers the *Sieurs de Beaucaire*
 and *Belle-Isle*, with whom I went a
 cruising to the Mouth of the Channel.

I HAD been scarce two Days at Sea, His Engage-
 when I met with an *English Merchant* ment with
 Ship, which I resolved to make Prize an *English*
 of. The Sea swell'd, the Night came Merchant
 on, and the Weather was very foul. Ship.
 Nevertheless, I try'd to board her, but
 the Waves were so boisterous that it
 was not possible for us to fix our
 Grappling Irons. We fought a long
 Time, during which the Enemy suffer'd
 very much, and lost their Main Top-
 Mast.

THE Night prov'd so dark that we
 cou'd hardly see her; however I wou'd
 not quit her, I resolved to keep close to
 her till Day-Light, hoping that then
 the Weather would be calmer, and it
 would be easy for me to board her.
 We were in this Situation for some
 Hours, when I received a Discharge of
 Hail Shot, in my Face, from a Mus-
 ket, which, in a Moment, cover'd me
 all over with Blood; whereupon, turn-
 ing about to *Belle-Isle*, who was then
 upon Watch, *Keep this Ship*, said I, *as*

1686. *I have done to this Hour; I only go to have my Wounds dress'd, and will return after a little Refreshment.*

I KNOW not how that Officer managed it, but the Ship disappear'd; whether she went to the Bottom, which was not unlikely, because she was very much damag'd, or whether *Belle-Isle* suffered her to make her Escape, which was yet more probable; however it was, I severely reprimanded my Lieutenant, who made the best Excuse he cou'd, by assuring me that he did not know how it happened.

Takes one
laden with
Sugar.

Two Days after this, I took a Ship laden with Sugar, which was bound from *Boston*, a Port which the *English* have in *Canada*. The Storm, and the Continuance of foul Weather, obliged me to put into a Port of *Ireland* nam'd *Waterford*, where I refitted and took in some Refreshments. As soon as the Weather was calmer, I return'd a cruising, and sent my Prize to *Brest*.

His Danger
in *Bristol*
Channel.

The stormy Weather to which I was still expos'd for three Weeks, oblig'd me to lie by, so that I was drove by the Tide into *Bristol* Channel, where, being Windbound, I often found myself but Twelve Hours sail from being aground upon the Coasts of *England*, and but six from the same Fate on the Coasts of *Ireland*.

It

It
those
Pot
out, a
right
nary v
W
one M
Word
was f
to see
serv'd
nothin
Whir
Water
Mome
from
broke
the D
Water
as Ve
The
Decks
Crew
the Sa
this D
I, all
St. P
dress
you.
W
the Si
if he c
It

1689.



It was so dreadful a Sea, that, for those three Weeks, I did not let the Pot boil; my Crew was quite tir'd out, above half of my Men were downright sick, and the rest not extraordinary well.

WHILE the Sea was thus raging, one Morning about Ten o' Clock, Word was brought me, that the Land was seen to move; I went upon Deck to see what was the Matter, and observ'd, that this pretended Land was nothing else but a great Number of Whirlwinds together, which toss'd the Water into the Air. At the very same Moment my Ship received such a Shock from the Sea, as split the Main Sail, broke the Long-boat which was upon the Deck in Pieces, fill'd the Ship with Water, and turn'd her Keel upwards, as Vessels lie when they are careen'd. The sick Men, who were between the Decks, were drown'd; the affrighted Crew lamented, and made Vows to all the Saints in Paradise. Seeing them in this Disorder, *Courage, my Lads, said I, all these Vows are good; but St. Pump, St. Pump is the Saint you must all address to; make no Doubt but he'll save you.*

He orders
an Invoca-
tion of St.
Pump.

WITHOUT Loss of Time, I order'd the *Sieur de Beaucaire* to go to the Prow, if he cou'd, and put up a Miffen Sail, to

1689.

see if the Ship, which was upon her Side, would recover. This Officer, whose Valour was not shock'd by the Difficulty of the Attempt, did so accordingly, and, being followed by some of the Seamen, a Miffen Sail was hoisted, and the Ship turned up in the Manner I wished. Then I caus'd the Deck to be tore up with Crows, upon which, some of the Water ran off, the rest fell into the Hold, and the Ship being set a little to rights, began to recover her true Motion.

I HAD scarce any Provisions left; for the Salt Water had spoil'd all we had. We went before the Wind; I caus'd the Bodies of those who had been drown'd between the Decks to be thrown overboard, and the rest of the Crew being unfit for farther Service, I resolv'd, while it was yet Day, to run my Vessel upon the Coast of *Ireland*, to the end, that, happen what wou'd, the Crew might not be made Prisoners. For we were not at War with *Ireland*, and the King's Declaration extended only to *England* and *Scotland*.

He runs his
Ship ashore
at *Duncan-*
non.

A SMALL Glimmering of Light from a Ray of the Sun, made me discover the Mountains of *Danguemont*, by which I found that we were not above four Leagues from the Port of *Duncanon*. We follow'd the Coast, and

1689.

and after having found the Entrance of the Port, we ran ashore there a little before Night. M. du Guesstre Munier, and M. Dyun the Commanders of two of the King's Frigates in *Waterford* River, when they heard who we were, sent their Long-boat to carry us ashore, and with this Assistance I made the Ship secure.

As soon as I was landed, my first Care was to make Hospitals for my sick Men. Out of Two hundred and thirty Men that I took with me from *Brest*, I had no more than Seventy-five left, all the rest having dy'd of Labour, Fear, or Sicknefs. Being not able to continue cruising with such a Handful of Men, I scrap'd an Acquaintance with the Merchants of the Country, who loaded my Ship with Hides, Tallow, and Wool, by which Cargo I got Twelve thousand Livres.

IN my Return to *Brest* I took another Prize from the *Flushingers*, which I carry'd in with me. When the People saw me come into the Harbour, they look'd upon me as a Man risen from the Dead. For, as the Time I had been out, was too long for the Provisions I took with me, and as the Storm had cast away a vast Number of Ships, I was reckon'd in the Number of those that were lost.

Takes as Prize in his Return to *Brest*.

1690.



THE next Year, that is to say, in 1690, I was nominated to go to *Roche-fort* to command one of the King's Ships, call'd *la Fidele*. I carry'd my Ship to *Brest*, which was the Place of Rendezvous for the Squadron that was to be commanded by the Marshal *de Tourville*. The Fleet had been for some Days in the Channel, when we met that of the Enemy off of the Isle of *Wight* to which ours was superior by far; for the two *English* and *Dutch* Squadrons join'd together made but Fifty-eight Ships of the Line of Battle, whereas we had Fourscore.

Fight between the French and Confederate Fleets at Beachy-head.

M. de Tourville gave the Signal to range the Fleet in Order of Battle. The Enemy attack'd us: An obstinate Fight ensued, in which a great many Men were kill'd, and, though the *English* seem'd not to have so great a Share in the Action as the *Dutch*, it may be said, that, for above three Hours that it continued, the Two Fleets shew'd a great deal of Valour, and signaliz'd themselves by Exploits worthy of being recorded in History; and I wou'd gladly mention them, but I ought to remember that I am only writing Memoirs, and not a Narrative of all the remarkable Passages that have happen'd in the several Actions I have been engag'd in.

BUT,

1690.

BUT, to say something of it in a few Words, the Enemy had the Worst on't, and their Fleet was incomparably more damag'd than ours. There were few of their Ships but what were miserably shatter'd; a great Number of 'em had scarce any Masts or Sails left, in short, their Fleet wou'd have been utterly ruin'd if they had not wisely had Recourse to the only Expedient that could bring them off.

WHEN they saw they were ruin'd, they lay upon their Anchors some Distance from us without any Sail, and rang'd in Order of Battle. The Knowledge I had of the Channel gave me to understand that they were at Anchor, and I soon saw what made them put themselves in that Posture. I told it to my Officers, and, as I was appointed Repeater of the Signals, I had a Mind to make a Signal for our Fleet to drop their Anchors. For we cou'd not frustrate what they were doing, but by casting Anchor ourselves, in order to hinder our Fleet from driving with the Tide so far from the Enemy, as to have it out of our Power to improve the Advantage we had over them.

THE Sieurs *de Moisse* and *Choiseuil* (that *Choiseuil* who had been a Slave at *Algier*, and whose Adventure I mention'd when I spoke of the second Bombard-

1690.



Bombardment of that Town) both my Lieutenants, made me alter my Resolution, and represented to me, that it was not convenient for me to correct the General. Therefore we did not drop our Anchors. Our Fleet was drove with the Tide as the Enemy foresaw; and therefore taking the Advantage of the Distance we were carry'd from them, they escap'd in the Night-time, without losing more than one single Ship, which having no Anchor, was drove upon us, and taken. We pursued their Fleet for some time, but with little Success; for they were too far off, and were for most part got into the Ports of *England* and *Holland*, before we cou'd come up with them. Two of the *English* Ships ran aground on their own Coasts, which we oblig'd to burn one another, but all the rest got safe into the *Downs*.

For my own Part, I pursu'd a *Dutch* Vice-Admiral's Ship, which had three Decks, but had lost her Mainmast. I let him run ashore before a little Harbour in the Channel, and hasten'd to carry Advice of it to M. de *Tourville*. He order'd me to find out the Marquis de *Villete*, the Lieutenant-General, and to take a Fireship along with me out of the Rear of the main Batallia, and go and set the *Dutchman* on fire.

Bombardment

M. de

M. de
follow
Sight
ret,
I know
Fires
I pur
to th
but a
wou'd
Tr
nant
Sloop
for th
found
what
to ap
fir'd
small
nal f
migh
not a
the F
Fleet
the R
de Gr
M. de
North
but r
quick
kirk,

M
ceiv'd

1690.

1911

M. de Villele order'd M. de Riberet to follow me, and we both came in Sight of the stranded Ship; but *Riberet*, what private Orders he might have I know not, return'd, and carry'd the Fireship back with him. Nevertheless, I pursu'd my Point. I made a Signal to the Fireship to come and join me; but as I was not the senior Officer, he wou'd not obey me.

THE Chevalier *de St. Olere*, Lieutenant of a Ship, who commanded the Sloop which *M. de Villette* had given me for this Execution, went before me, founding the Bottom, to know exactly what Quantity of Water I had need of to approach the stranded Ship, which fir'd several Volleys of Cannon and small Shot ; upon which I made a Signal for the Sloop to return, that she might get out of Harm's way. Being not able to do any Execution without the Fireship, I return'd to join the Fleet, which went to cast Anchor in the Road of *Chef de Bris* before *Havre de Grace*. In a few Days after this, *M. de Relingue* was detach'd to cruise Northwards. I was in that Squadron, but the Continuance of bad Weather quickly oblig'd us to return to *Dunkirk*, where the Squadron was laid up.

MUCH about the same Time we re-
ceiv'd the melancholy News of the
Death

**The Death
of M. Seig-
nelay.**

1690.

His Chara-
cter.

Death of the Marquis *de Seignelay*; which was a considerable Loss to the Navy, in which he had made great Improvement, and wou'd, no doubt have brought it to a farther Degree of Perfection, if he had not been cut off in the midst of his Career. As for my own Part, his Death was a considerable Loss to me: For this Minister had always honour'd me with his Protection, and I had as great Reason to be fond of him, as I had to complain of his Successor. In the mean time, to confine myself to *M. de Seignelay*, I will venture to affirm, that as he had an indefatigable Father to form him, and as he was himself a Person of consummate Abilities, *France* has had few Ministers so active, so laborious, and so vigilant as he was; and whatever Part of his Time he bestow'd upon his Pleasures, it was without Prejudice to his Duties, which he always kept in his Eye, and never postpon'd.

BESIDES a thousand excellent Qualities, which gain'd him the Esteem of all that had the Pleasure of his Acquaintance; if we consider him as a Minister, he was full of Zeal for the Service of his Sovereign, jealous of the Nation's Honour, whose Glory he had extremely at Heart, and a sincere Friend to Merit, which he never suf-

fer'd.

fer'd
ever
the R
Dign
I hav
my N
M
Gene
ed to
new I
Navy
order
one c
be un
W
ping
kirk t
Ships
board
finish
diness
out o
being
sides t
came
the R
TH
puttin
upon
Arma
comm
after v
he ag

1690.

fer'd to languish in Obscurity, whenever he found it out. I am persuaded the Reader will forgive me this short Digression, and not take it amiss that I have deviated for a Moment from my Narration to express my Gratitude.

M. de Pontchartrain, Comptroller-General of the Finances, was appointed to succeed M. de Seignelay. This new Minister made no Alteration in the Navy. Not long after this, the Court order'd three new Ships to be built; one of which call'd the *Pearl*, was to be under my Command.

His Successor.

WHEN the Season came on for equipping the Fleet, Orders arriv'd at *Dunkirk* for the fitting out of eight great Ships, and I was appointed to go aboard the *Pearl*. The Armament was finish'd, and the Squadron was in a Readiness for Sailing, but could never get out of the Port, because the Enemy being inform'd of this Armament, besides the fitting up of several Privateers, came with forty Ships and block'd up the Road.

The *Dunkirkers* block'd up.

THE little Prospect there was of our putting to Sea this Campaign, put me upon drawing up a new Scheme for an Armament on the King's Account. I communicated my Views to *Bart*; and after we had maturely examin'd them, he agreed, that they cou'd not but be

The Count's Project for a new Armament.

of

1691. of very great Benefit, and consented with all his Heart, that the whole shou'd be sent to Court in his Name.

I THEREFORE wrote to the Minister, and acquainted him, that the Ships fitted out for this Campaign being render'd unserviceable by the Enemy's Fleet, which stop'd up the Road; for it was impossible that such large Ships as ours, which cou'd not stir out but in the Day-time, and were oblig'd to make their Way thro' narrow Passages, shou'd venture to quit the Harbour without evident Danger of being taken. I acquainted him, I say, that Things being in this Situation, I thought it convenient, rather than to leave the Enemy entire Masters of the Sea, that the Court shou'd consent to arm a Squadron of little Ships, to be commanded by myself and other Captains that I nam'd; that with the first fair Wind, we shou'd make our Way out between the Enemy's Ships, without any Difficulty, or running any Risque; and, that when we were out at Sea, we shou'd sail Northward to interrupt their Trade, which they carry'd on now with too little Disturbance.

THE Minister lik'd the Project at the very first Sight of it, and we began to work upon the Armament, which was already far advanc'd, when Bart

receiv'd

receiv
Cour
proac
gag'o
wou
which
pract
upon
ver h
derta
thouf
concl
not to

TH
owing
Office
missio
vantag
from
what
Minif
acqu
vy, g
gestio
Trans

BA
was fo
me, a
nation
in the
self in
are th
You do

1691.

How it was
receiv'd at
Court.

receiv'd a very disobliging Letter from Court, wherein M. de Pontchartrain reproach'd him for having absurdly engag'd the King in an Expence which wou'd answer no End ; that the Scheme which he had sent up, was utterly impracticable ; and that he had impos'd upon the Court, or else they wou'd never have consented to a chimerical Undertaking so ill digested. He added a thousand other disagreeable things, and concluded with a strict Charge to him not to go on.

THIS Mortification of M. Bart was owing to the Envy of some ill-dispos'd Officers, who being piqu'd at the Permission he had obtain'd, and the Advantages that wou'd accrue to him from it, if it had taken Place, wrote what they pleas'd to Court ; and the Minister, who was not yet very well acquainted with the Affairs of the Navy, giving Credit to their false Suggestions, wrote this Letter in the first Transports of his Anger.

BART, as intrepid a Man as he was, was so intimidated, that he came to me, and addressing me with a Consternation in his Countenance, said to me in the best French he cou'd express himself in, *Vous être cause de ça ; i. e. You are the Cause of this.* M. Bart (said I) You don't yet know what good Luck you may

1691.

may meet with. Are not you sensible as well as I, that our Project is feasible? and that we shall execute it in spite of all that envy us, if the Court will but give into it?

IF you'll have but Patience, I'll go for you to the Minister; I'll tell him, that when you propos'd this Armament, you thought the Execution of it not only possible, but very easy; that you believ'd it wou'd be advantageous to the King, and prejudicial to his Enemies; that they who had been pleas'd, either by Word of Mouth or Writing, to suggest that you propos'd a Chimæra, are either ignorant, or ill-dispos'd People. I will add, that all you desire is only that they will repose a Confidence in you, and that you will undertake to answer for all the Consequences that may attend the getting out of the Road. I am persuaded, that upon the Receipt of this Letter, the Minister will be of another Opinion, and that we shall have Orders to go on. The Event answer'd my Expectation. M. de Pontchartrain was undeceiv'd, and wrote to Bart in a very obliging Manner, commanding him to proceed.

The Count's
Prosecution of a
Man for
Debt.

THE Armament was in a manner compleated, when a Misfortune happen'd to me which retarded our Departure for several Days. I had summon'd a Burgher who ow'd me five hundred Livres,

Livres
After
forc'd
order
Durin
in the
dence
guage
too p
many
struck
made
ing u
that
vile M
of the
were
it, th
Hand
to suc
ment
afraid
which
them.
IN
plain
Adve
form
havin
ny F
appro
Citad
Wee

1691.

Livres, before the Bailiff of *Dunkirk*. After a great many Delays which I was forc'd to bear with, he was at length order'd to pay me in a Week's time. During this, I happen'd to meet him in the Street, where he had the Impudence to insult me with very ill Language. It was not in my Nature to be too passive, and being provok'd at the many abusive Words he gave me, I struck him with my Cane, which only made him more furious; so that lifting up his Voice in the Hearing of all that pass'd by, he call'd me all the vile Names he cou'd think of. Some of the Officers of the Garison, who were on the Spot, were so incens'd at it, that they cou'd not forbear laying Hands on him, and they curry'd him to such a Degree, that he was in a Moment all over bloody. In short, I was afraid they wou'd have kill'd him, which oblig'd me to step in between them, and to beg them to leave off.

The Abuse he receiv'd for it in the Street, from the Debtor.

The Debtor's severe Treatment by the Officers of the Garison.

In the mean time, my Spark complain'd, and sent an Account of this Adventure to M. *de Louvois*, who inform'd the King of it. His Majesty having been impos'd on by a great many Falshoods, there was an Order to apprehend me, and to carry me to the Citadel of *Calais*, where I remain'd three Weeks; during which I receiv'd all

His Complaint of the whole Affair to the Court.

The Count's Imprisonment for it.

manner

1691.



manner of good Usage from M. de *P'Aubaine*, the Commander of it.

The Terms
of his Re-
lease.

As soon as I was made a Prisoner, I prepar'd to justify myself to the Court. I wrote to the Minister, and to *Bontems*. The latter espous'd my Cause with so much Vigour, that he obtain'd my Liberty, on Condition nevertheless, that I shou'd go to *Dunkirk* along with the Commander of the Marines, and ask the Burgher's Pardon.

The Bur-
gher's Inso-
lence to
him.

THERE was no avoiding it. The Order was literally executed, and the Burgher receiv'd me with intolerable Arrogance, giving me to understand very plainly, that I never shou'd have one Sou's of my five hundred Livres. Thus, for a few Strokes with my Cane, was I imprison'd, forc'd to make my Submission, and lost my Money, which the Rascal kept from me, and which I never cared to ask him for again, for fear lest I shou'd fall into a Passion like the first, and bring myself into greater Trouble.

The Count
sails out of
Dunkirk
with *Bart*.

THIS unhappy Affair being over, and the Armament finish'd, we sail'd in the Night-time. We pass'd without Interruption between the Enemy's Ships, and made such Speed, that by Day-break we were got out of their Sight. In the Evening, we perceiv'd four Sail coming our Way. *Bart* said

at

1691.

at first, they were four of the Enemy's Ships that were detach'd from the Blockade in Pursuit of us; but for my own Part, I was of a different Opinion. I observ'd to him, that as we made a great deal of Sail last Night with light Ships fresh careen'd, insomuch, that by Day-break we were out of Sight of the Enemy, or any Pursuer; and as we had held on the same Course all Day, it was not possible that we cou'd be overtaken in the Evening by Ships that were not near so light as ours.

THE Ship I commanded being the best Sailor in the Squadron, it was agreed that I shou'd speak with them. I came up with them in the Night, put out a Lanthorn for a Signal, and fir'd a Gun. I came within the Hearing of him who seem'd to be the Commander. We talk'd together; I found 'twas an *English* Man of War with three Merchant-Ships under her Convoy, and gave out to them, that I was *English* too. The Captain sent to tell me, that they were bound to *Muscovy*; and I call'd out to him, that I was come from *Flushing*. He believ'd what I said to be true; I kept near him all Night, and at break of Day I hoisted the white Flag, board'd him, and after a slight Battle, took him. The Ship carry'd forty-four Guns, and mine but thirty-two.

The

He takes
an *English*
Man of
War, and
three Mer-
chant Ships

1691.

The *English* lost forty Men in this Engagement, and I but six. The other three Ships were made Prizes without any Difficulty, and almost without striking a Stroke.

BART's Instructions from Court were to burn all the Prizes he took. But the Intendant of *Dunkirk* having an Eye to his own Interest, had qualify'd those Orders with respect to him, by giving him to understand, that tho' 'twas the Court's Intention that all Prizes shou'd be burnt, yet considerable Prizes ought to be sav'd.

In pursuance of this Explanation, he had set a Commissioner over him, with Orders to deliver Prizes of a certain Value to him, and to place them to his Account. As the four Ships we had now taken, were worth above three Millions, after having clear'd them, we sent them under Convoy of a Frigate belonging to the Squadron, to the Port of *Berghen* in *Norway*, subject to the King of *Denmark*, with whom we were at Peace.

Destroys
the Dutch
Herring
Fleet.

Two Days after this, we met the Fleet of Herring Busses, under Convoy of a *Dutch* Man of War. We made no Scruple to attack them; I carry'd off the Man of War, and all the rest were made Prizes. After we had taken the Crews on board, we burnt all

the

the Sh
lue ;
soners
land.

A F
upon t
to Bar
some
which
the be
because
in the
to the
my P
ment o

A F
twenty
Place f
Ship B
great in
the E
within
Men, a
were bu
Palace,
because

were ta
eat be
UPO
ne Sco
Neighb
ody o
ho we
VOL.

1691.

the Ships which were but of little Value ; and soon after, we set the Prisoners ashore upon the Coast of *England*.

A FEW Days after this, as we were upon the Coast of *Scotland*, I propos'd to *Bart* to make a Descent, and to burn some Villages that we saw ; among which was a very fine Palace. I had the better Opinion of this Expedition, because probably it wou'd make a Noise in the Country, and give a Reputation to the Squadron. *Bart* approv'd of my Proposal, and left the Management of it wholly to me.

AFTER having landed, I caus'd twenty five Men to be posted in a proper Place for covering the Long Boats and Ship Boats, and for favouring our Retreat in case I shou'd be repuls'd by the Enemy. I afterwards advanc'd within Land, at the Head of all my Men, and began my Attack. Villages were burnt and plunder'd, and also the Palace, for which I was very sorry ; because I found by the Ornaments which were taken out of the Chapel, that the Seat belong'd to a *Roman* Catholick.

Makes a Descent in *Scotland*.

Plunders the Seat of a *Roman* Catholick by Mistake.

UPON the Noise of this Expedition, the *Scots*, who were assembled in the Neighbourhood, hastily form'd a small body of Horse, and another of Foot, who were but poorly disciplin'd ; however,

1691. ever, I retir'd in good Order as soon as I heard of it. Their Horse attempted to pursue us, and was advancing towards the Marines, but the Officer I had posted to cover them, made a Discharge upon them, and oblig'd them to retire. I lost but one Man in the Expedition, who indeed ow'd his Death to his Avarice; for having loaded himself with more Plunder than he cou'd well carry, he lagg'd behind so, that he was overtaken by the Horse, and kill'd.

Takes and
burns more
Ships of the
Fishery.

BEFORE we left this Coast, we took several other Fishing Smacks, and burnt them. One Morning I spy'd a Dutch Ship, and went from my Company to give her Chase. Bad Weather overtook me, and carry'd me so far from the Squadron, that I never saw it again till I came to the Place of Rendezvous where I arriv'd just as my Stock of Provision was spent, having burnt four English Ships in my Voyage.

Burns four
English
Ships.

His Prizes
seiz'd by the
Danes, thro'
the Indolence of
Bart.

THE Squadron having got the Start of me for several Days, when I came to land, I found Things in the poorest Plight that cou'd be. M. Bart, without any manner of Thought, was continually rioting in a Tavern. The Governor, who only took him for a Privateer, had so little Regard for him that he took the Prizes from him

which
of the
deliv
least
BE

lence,
unwor
scanda
rectly
French
said I,
what
taken

nor fa
not kn
King
they w
ever, i
and th
dant.

UPON

Intenda
me ver

the Go

they m

and reti

their ow

Business

ately

nd Ship

urn'd o

Possessio

which

which we had taken in the Beginning of the Campaign; so that they were deliver'd up to the *Danes*, without the least Opposition to it by *Bart*.

BEING provok'd at *Bart*'s Indolence, I told him very sharply how unworthy it was to put up with such scandalous Treatment; and going directly to the Governor, who understood *French*, and spoke it very well, *Sir*, said I, very smartly, *What Right, and what Authority had you to seize the Prizes taken by the King's Ships?* The Governor said, in his Excuse, that he did not know those Ships belong'd to the King of *France*; and that he thought they were but Privateers: That, however, it was not he that seiz'd them, and that I must apply to the Intendant.

The Count's
Expostulation
with
the Danish
Governor
upon it.

UPON this Answer, I went to the Intendant, who, after having heard me very coolly, referr'd me back to the Governor. I saw plainly what they meant by all their Management; and returning to *Bart*, *Since they make their own Game with us*, said I, 'tis our Business to do ourselves Justice. Immediately we mann'd out our Long Boats and Ship Boats, boarded the Prizes, and turn'd out the *Danes* that were put in Possession of 'em.

He takes
them again
by Force.

1691.



THIS being a pretty bold Stroke, I wrote about it immediately to M. de *Pruneviaux*, the King's Ambassador at the Court of his *Danish* Majesty, whom I was very glad to preposseis with a true State of the Matter, to the End, that if any Complaints were made, he might return for Answer, That we had only committed this Violence upon the *Danes* because they had refus'd to do us Justice when we demanded it.

As soon as we had recover'd our Ships, we look'd into every one of 'em; and soon perceiv'd that they had lighten'd 'em very much by their Plunder: Upon which I said to *Bart*, that before we took off the Seals, I was of Opinion we shou'd send for all the Clerks and the Commissioners, that they might take an Account of the State of the Prizes, and an Inventory of what they contain'd.

THIS Counsel being follow'd, we found that half of their Effects had been carry'd off; there being few or none of the Bales but what had been open'd. In the Examination that was made into this Affair, the Commissioner being found guilty, was arrested and put in Irons, and the Captain of the Frigate that convoy'd the Ships, was also put under Arrest upon Suspicion.

Persons arrested for plundering those Ships.

IN
Provi
every
inform
ing us
by the
sad P
enoug
had a
fire th
with I

WH
imprae
already
the Pr
the Fro
from co
thing t
san, a
raise b
the rig
we had
ney, e
Biscuit
while
Advan
pay do
had.

M.
my Le
plaints
Court,
Danish

1691.



His Shift
for Provi-
sions.

IN the mean time we had scarce any Provisions left. We expected some every Day from *France*, when we were informed, that a Ship which was bringing us a Supply from *Brest*, was taken by the Privateers of *Flushing*. In this sad Plight, having not near Money enough to victual the Squadron, *Bart* had a Mind to write to *France*, to desire that a second Ship might be sent with Provisions.

WHAT you propose, said I, is utterly impracticable: Consider that the Season is already far advanc'd, and that before the Provisions can be ready to come away, the Frosts will set in and hinder the Ships from coming out of Port. We have nothing to do but to make the best Shift we can, and to see what Provisions we can raise here. *Bart* own'd that I was in the right. We sold one of the Prizes we had taken, and with the ready Money, employ'd all the Ovens in baking Biscuit, the Brewers in brewing Beer; while both Baker and Brewer, taking Advantage of our Necessity, made us pay double Prices for every thing we had.

M. de *Pruneviaux*, who had receiv'd my Letters, did not expect any Complaints of us. He prepossess'd the Court, and complain'd himself to his Danish Majesty of the Treatment we had

1691.



The Governor's Submission to the Count.

receiv'd in his Ports. This Prince sent thundering Letters to the Governor, who not being able to hide his Chagrin, came to me with Tears in his Eyes, to desire me to excuse him to his Master, otherwise, *said he*, I am undone without any Remedy. Sir, *said I*, 'Tis not in my Power to unsay what I have writ against you, the rather, because you know very well, that I have writ nothing but the Truth; and all that I can do to serve you, is to write in your Favour, on Condition that you will behave better for the future.

The Count is suppos'd to be the French K's Bastard.

THE haughty Air in which I talk'd both to the Intendant and the Governor, the Reprimand which the latter had receiv'd upon my Account, a very splendid Equipage, and especially a blue Suit which I wore, embroider'd with Gold, very rich, and of a curious Fancy; all these things together, gave the Inhabitants of *Bergben* a Notion, that I must needs be the natural Son of the King of *France*. Those honest Clodpates, who seldom see any Officers that are profuse in their Expences, were so positive it must be so, that it wou'd have been a hard Task to have beat it out of their Noddles.

I LEFT them in their Mistake, because I had done nothing to lead them into it; and because it serv'd to give

me

1691.

me a Reputation and Credit. *Bart*, who minded nothing but his Diversion, envy'd me neither one nor the other. Every thing was left to me, and I had the Care of all the Business of the Squadron, without his giving himself the least Trouble about it.

WHILE our Provisions were carrying aboard, two of our Officers being one Night at the Tavern, committed a thousand Disorders there. They made such a Noise, that the City Watch seiz'd and carry'd them to the Watch-house; upon which one of the Sparks, by way of Scorn, let down his Breeches, and shew'd them his bare Buttocks. The Townsman, nettled at this, fell upon him, ty'd his Hands behind him, and after disarming him of his Sword, laid him on with their Staves, so that they almost kill'd him.

Two of the French Officers seiz'd by the Watch for a Disturbance at a Tavern.

One of them like to be kill'd for an Insult on the Watch.

BEING inform'd of this Adventure, just after it happen'd, I said to *Bart*, that it was his Business to reclaim those Officers, and to demand them of the Burgomaster; for the Governor had nothing to do with that Guard. *Bart* wou'd not stir one Foot about it, and upon his Refusal, I resolv'd to go myself. I put on my blue Suit, which made them take the more Notice of me, and I went to the Watch-house, attended with a couple of lusty Footmen.

1691.

The Count's
Appearance to re-
claim them.

AT my Appearance, the Burghers were all drawn up in a Line under Arms. I spoke to them with a grand Air, and threaten'd they shou'd all be hang'd for presuming to lay their Hands upon the King's Officer; they made the best Excuse they cou'd; I caus'd the Swords to be restor'd, and having order'd the Officer to be untty'd, who was very much asham'd of the Plight I found him in, for his Breeches were still down, I carry'd him with me to the Burgomaster, and demanded Justice of him for what had pass'd.

THIS Magistrate, who was a Man of very good Sense, made me Answer, that he was very sorry he had not Authority enough over the Burghers, to give me the Satisfaction I desir'd; but that he desir'd me to consider the Officers were in Fault for being abroad so late at Night, contrary to the Custom of the Country; that the Watch, which was only establish'd to maintain good Order, wou'd have been guilty of a Neglect of their Duty, if they had not apprehended 'em, when they found them making a Noise in the Tavern; and that if they were ill us'd, it was not till after they had insulted the Watch in a very outrageous manner. He added, that for his own Part, he was very much mortify'd

mortify'd
that, a
Evil,
it to

I A
I thoug
lity, w
noisy I
faction
sery'd
with.

HA
the Cr
we fail
after o
of Flu
give
with a
Weath
the So
kept
under
with H
the E
for a V
of two
at last
arriv'd
my M
the K
Court
BA
Days

1691.



mortify'd at what had happen'd; but that, as there was no Remedy for the Evil, he beg'd me to lay no Part of it to his Charge.

I ACQUIESC'D in his Reasons, which I thought were very good; and in reality, was not very sorry that those two noisy Fellows cou'd not obtain Satisfaction, because they had richly deserv'd the Treatment they had met with.

HAVING stor'd all our Provisions, the Crews went on aboard again, and we sail'd with our Prizes. Some Days after our Departure, I saw a Privateer of *Flushing*, which I was resolv'd to give Chase to, but I was overtaken with a Fog, and soon after with bad Weather, which separated me from the Squadron. The contrary Winds kept us so long at Sea, that we were under a Necessity either of starving with Hunger, or of selling ourselves to the Enemy, my Crew being reduced for a Week together to the Allowance of two Ounces of Bread *per* Day; and at last, having suffer'd a great deal, I arriv'd at *Dunkirk*, where, to compleat my Misfortune, I found an Order from the King, commanding me to repair to Court, to give an Account of my Conduct.

He sails from *Norway*.

His Distress for want of Provisions.

His Arrival at *Dunkirk*, and Summons to Court to answer for his Conduct.

BART, who was arriv'd there a few Days before, had receiv'd the same Or-

1691.

der, and only waited for my Coming, that we might consult together how to act. This Disgust which the Court seem'd to have conceiv'd, was owing to the ill Offices done us by the Intendant *Patoulet*; for we discover'd, that the Commissioner, who was planted upon us only to favour the Intendant with an Opportunity of appropriating Part of the Prizes, had writ to him against us, and complain'd that *Bart* who did nothing without my Advice had put him in Irons, for fear he shou'd be Witness of all our Robberies. Upon these Informations, the Intendant himself made his Complaint to the Minister, and aggravated every Circumstance that the Commissioner had reported to him.

WE agreed, that, without shewing the least Resentment, I shou'd set out Post for the Court. That *Bart* shou'd follow me by short Journeys, and that when we were both come to *Paris*, he shou'd see no body before he spoke with me. This being determin'd, I set out the very Day after my Arrival at *Dunkirk*, and went to wait upon M. *Pontchartrain*, to whom I so fully justify'd our Behaviour that the Minister, who had been prejudiced against us, submitted to the Truth, and de-

clar'd

clar'd
Step
BA
and
deserv
share
rewar
paign
given
he ha
where
no m
which
As
Repu
fious
that i
upon
say i
Chev
about
Trut
the v
a ver
ther
learn
a Na
a po
naliz
he h
but
self
Sea-S

1691.



clar'd, that he was satisfy'd with every Step we had taken.

BART arriv'd not many Days after, and was receiv'd much better than he deserv'd; for tho' he had little or no share in what had been done; yet to reward him for his Service this Campaign, he had a Thousand Crowns given him, and all, forsooth! because he had the Title of a Commander; whereas I, who bore all the Burden, had no manner of Consideration for it; which mortify'd me not a little.

The Count's
Character
of *Bart*.

As *Bart* was a Man of very great Reputation, the whole Court was desirous to see him, and I was the Man that introduc'd him into all Company, upon which the merry Wags us'd to say in a Banter; *Let's go and see the Chevalier de Forbin, who leads the Bear about with him*. And, to speak the Truth, they were not altogether in the wrong. For *Bart* was a Man of a very mean Genius, and cou'd neither Read nor Write, tho' he had learn'd to make his Name. He was a Native of *Dunkirk*, and at first but a poor Fisherman, but having signaliz'd himself by his Actions, tho' he had no Patron, nor no Support but his own Merit, he advanc'd himself from one Step to another in the Sea-Service till he came to be Com-

1691.



modore. He was Tall, Robust, and well made, but of a clownish Air, spoke little and bad, tho' his Language was very proper for a bold Action; but was absolutely incapable of any Project that had any Compass of Thought in it.

The Count's
Disgust
with the
Court for
being unre-
warded;

As I laid it very much to Heart that I had no Recompence at the End of a Campaign, during which I had certainly done good Service; I was very desirous that *M. de Pontchartrain* shou'd be inform'd of the Part I bore, both in the Project and in the Execution of it. I desir'd *Bart* to acquaint him of it. I reckon'd he wou'd do me this Service with the more Willingness, because I had done the like for him after we escap'd from our Prison at *Plymouth*; but whether it was from Brutishness or Timorousness, he never open'd his Lips in my Favour.

And with
Commo-
dore *Bart*
for his In-
gratitude.

THIS Step, which provok'd me more than all the rest, made me think of taking Measures to prevent my returning any more to *Dunkirk*: For I was resolv'd to serve no longer under a Man to do all the Offices, to draw up all the Writings, and make all the Signals and Plans, while he ran away with all the Profit. I declar'd my Sentiments upon this Head to my Friends of the Navy Office, and begg'd them to

order

order
to th
grant
A
Cour
the A
the K
Monj
I ma
to fi
won
there
tho'
foon
Acco
Gam
suffer
want
a sev
whic
the S
Auth
me,
in th
the C
my
him
the
that
it, I
now
there

1691.

order it so, that I might be remov'd to the Station at *Brest*, which was granted.

ALL the Time that I stay'd at Court, I went regularly every Day to the Apartments of the *Dauphin*, whom the King had settled at *Versailles*, where *Monseigneur* allow'd very great Gaming. I made one at the Table, which I us'd to frequent in the Afternoons, and won above Two thousand *Lewid'ors* there to my great Satisfaction at first, tho' I had reason to repent of it very soon; for the King, who had an exact Account of every that pass'd at this Gaming-Table, ask'd *Bontems* why he suffer'd me to play so high. There wanted nothing more to subject me to a severe Reprimand; for the Affection which *Bontems* entertain'd for me, and the Services he had done me, gave him Authority to say what he pleas'd to me, and he talk'd so sharply to me in the Presence of *M. de Fourville* and the *Chevalier de Bethomas*, who were both my intimate Friends, that I promis'd him I wou'd never play so high for the future. I kept my Word; and that I might not be tempted to break it, I went to *Paris*, where I play'd now and then, but was not so lucky there as I had been at *Versailles*.

The Count's
good Luck
at the Gam-
ing Table.

He is re-
prov'd for
playing
high.

I WENT

1692.

Is a second
Time ap-
pointed to
Command
the *Pearl*.

And sent to
Convoy
Ships to *La*
Hogue, to
bring over
K. James
and his
Forces to
England.

His Ac-
count of
Havre de
Grace.

His Alarm
at the Ap-
pearance of
the Confe-
derate Fleet
off of *La*
Hogue.

I WENT a little before the End of the *Winter* to *Brest*, where I was a second time appointed Commander of the *Pearl*. A little before the Squadron sail'd from thence, I and the *Sieur de Iury*, another Captain of a Ship, were detach'd to *St. Malo*, to convoy several Merchant Vessels which the King had order'd to *La Hogue*, to take Troops on Board there for the Service of King *James*, who intended to go over to *England*.

HOWEVER, it was as yet a very great Secret, and all the Speculations upon it were but meer Conjectures, which were like enough to be false, the Court having not declar'd what they intended. We had carry'd our Convoy to the Place appointed, and were making the same Course back again, when we were obliged to Anchor before *Havre de Grace*, that a Man of War, which had been built there, might come out with the more Safety. This is an incommodious Harbour in one respect, because, for want of a sufficient Depth of Water, they can't put out large Ships to Sea till they have taken out all their Cannon. As we lay before *Havre*, I receiv'd a Letter from *M. de Louvigne* about Day-break, with these Words: *Forty-five of the Enemy's Ships are at Anchor*

Anchor along the Coast, about five Leagues from you: Save yourself if possible. Upon this Message, of which I gave Advice to my Brother Captain, I sail'd immediately, and got away without being pursued by the Enemy, who saw me, but let me go off very peaceably.

As I was continuing my Course to *Brest*, I met a small *French Ship* which assur'd me she came out of that Harbour with the Royal Squadron, under the Command of the Marshal *de Tourville*. The Pilot of this little Vessel acquainting me what Course they had steer'd, I shap'd mine the same Way, and actually came up with the Fleet that very Evening. I made no delay to acquaint the General of the Intelligence I had receiv'd from the Intendant of *Havre de Grace*, and I went with my Ship into the Centre of the Fleet, where I found my Station was mark'd.

The *French Fleet* sails out of *Brest*.

THE Views of the Court, and the Project for a Landing in *England*, were no longer a Secret, and King *James* was actually gone to *La Hogue* with a Design to embark at the Head of above Twenty thousand Men, as soon as he heard of the Success of a Battle which M. *de Tourville* had Orders to give the *English*, and, if the Case

K. *James's* intended Descent.

1692.



Cafe requir'd, even to hazard it, which indeed was necessary in order to secure the Descent, which nothing cou'd hinder but the Enemy's Fleet.

'Tis not to be doubted, but if the Enemy had had the worst on't, which probably wou'd have happen'd if their Fleet had been hinder'd from joyning, this Project of a Descent, which was dash'd to Pieces by the Shock that our Navy receiv'd, wou'd have given the *English* a great deal of Uneasiness and Exercise. But the contrary Winds, which reign'd for three Weeks, and hinder'd us from advancing, gave the Enemy Time to join their Forces, so that instead of Forty-five Ships, as they were computed to be, they made the Number of Ninety-six after they were joyn'd.

THE Winds becoming more favourable, the King's Fleet return'd into the Channel. I was detach'd for the Look-out. I met the Enemy's Fleet off of *Havre de Grace*, where they gave me all the Leisure that cou'd be to view them. I fir'd my Cannon, and, according to my Orders, made the Signals to specify the Number of their Ships. Notwithstanding their Superiority, the Marshal, who, as I have already said, had Orders to attack at all Events, gave the Signal for Battle.

I fell

I fell
third
the

T
Orde
near
begu
and
side
ginn
to th
a fu
orde
Van
by t
Sinc
ber
in a
been
as t
attac
tunit

T
com
to ca
their
our
rents
pass
they
of t
Batt
My

I fell into my Post, which was the 1692.
third Ship in the Line of Battle near
the Admiral.

THE Enemy expected us in good Battle of
Order, and suffer'd us to approach as La Hogue.
near as we pleas'd. The Fight was
begun with a great deal of Vigour,
and even with some Advantage on our
side: But the Wind, which in the be-
ginning of the Action was favourable
to the King's Ships, turn'd about on
a sudden in favour of the Enemy. In
order to improve this Advantage, their
Van wheel'd round our Navy, which
by that means was between two Fires.
Since they were far superior in Num-
ber (for we had but Forty-four Ships
in all) no doubt but our Fleet had
been utterly ruin'd, if they had done
as they ought; but their Slowness in
attacking, made them lose the Oppor-
tunity.

THE Tide, the Night, and a Fog
coming on, oblig'd M. de Tourville
to cast Anchor. The Enemy suffer'd
their Ships that had wheel'd round
our Fleet, to be drove with the Cur-
rents, and, by favour of the Fog,
pass'd between our Lines, from whence
they went and join'd the main Body
of their Fleet, which occasion'd a new
Battle, more bloody than the former.
My Ship was shot thro' with a Can-
non-

1692. non Ball. I was boarded by a Fire-Ship, from which I got rid at last, but not without much Difficulty; for I lost a great many Men, and was myself grievously wounded in the Knee.

THIS Cannonading, with which I had been so incommoded, lasted till Eleven o'Clock at Night. Notwithstanding my Wound, which was very painful, I refitted all Night, that I might be in a Condition to fight next Day. For it was plain that we must come to another Engagement. Tho' I wanted above a Third of my Crew, who were the best Sailors in the Navy, I was still in a Condition to make my Defence. At Day-break M. de Tourville made the Signals to put our selves in a Posture for Sailing. I attended him, but the whole Fleet was so dispers'd, that the General had but six Ships with him, all the rest being hid by a thick Fog.

DURING this, Major General Raimondis, who was in the Admiral's Ship, where he was dangerously wounded in the Knee, wanted to speak with me, and ask'd if the Chevalier de Forbin was not in Sight. I went on board the General's Ship, where I found my Friend in a pitiful State; he communicated some domestic Affairs to me, for his Life was in Danger, and desir'd

me

me to go on board *M. de Anfreville's* 1692.
Ship, in order to fetch a Surgeon of
whom he had a very good Opinion.
While I was doing this the Fog dis-
pers'd, the whole Fleet join'd again,
and the Enemy, who follow'd us,
drew up before us in Order of Battle.

THE contrary Tide having oblig'd
the King's Fleet to cast Anchor, the
Enemy's was forc'd to do the like.
As the frequent Visits I was oblig'd
to make to *Raimondis* had taken
up some Time, my Ship not being
able to recover her Post, happen'd to
be the nearest to the Enemy; for
a *Dutch* Vice-Admiral's Ship was
moor'd within Cannon Shot behind
me. Thus we pass'd all the Day
without Action.

IN the Evening there appear'd a
Fleet of Forty Sail, which were Mer-
chant Ships going to *Havre de Grace*
under Convoy of one of the King's
Ships. The *English*, who spy'd them
as well as we, thought 'twas the Fleet
which the Count *d'Estrees* was bring-
ing from *Provence* to join ours; which
was the Reason that they put them-
selves again in Order of Battle, expect-
ing another Attack; but when Day
broke, we saw they were about seven
Leagues off.

1692.

If we had in our Turn, taken Advantage of the Opportunity which offer'd, as it were, of itself, this false Step of the Enemy would have given the King's Fleet all the Time necessary to get away. But we did not improve it, and, for what Reason I cou'd never comprehend, the General resolv'd to go and cast Anchor at the Entrance of *Ras Blanchart*, instead of sheering quite off, tho' he was not in a Condition to strike a Stroke.

At last, an unforeseen Accident spoil'd all. The Admiral's and several other Ships slipp'd their Anchors, so that the Tide drove them upon the Enemy. *M. de Tourville*, who saw all was lost, being unwilling to hazard the whole Fleet, which was ready to follow, and wou'd infallibly have been either taken or sunk, took down his General's Flag, and *M. de Panetier* the Commodore gave the Signal for rallying, which sav'd the rest of the Fleet.

THOSE that follow'd the Fortune of the General run themselves ashore at *la Hogue*, where Fourteen of our best Men of War were unhappily burnt. I sav'd mine, tho' pierced thro' and thro', and following the rest of the Fleet, which was in no better a Condition, we went into the Road of *St. Malo*, where, after having refitted, and put
fresh

fresh
with
sail'd
own
and
Mou
W
when
from
Ships
We
man
and
Com
laden
I ha
Ship
the
Pink
H
Port
Priv
who
me
cruis
seein
Stay
find
Kin
Plyn
Fras
steer
char

fresh Men aboard, I put to Sea again with four other Ships, two of which sail'd for the *Mediterranean*. For my own Part, I and the Sieurs *Desogues* and *d'Ivri* had Orders to cruise in the Mouth of the Channel. 1692.

WE had been some Days at Sea, when we perceiv'd a *Dutch* Fleet coming from *Portugal*, under Convoy of Two Ships, carrying each Fifty-two Guns. We attack'd it, I boarded the Commander and took him, while *Desogues* and *d'Ivri* took the other. Besides the Commander, I also took three Pinks, laden with Salt. I put all the Sailors I had taken into one of these Three Ships, which I sent away, and carry'd the Two Men of War and the Two Pinks to *Brest*.

HAVING receiv'd Advice at this Port, that there were some *Flushing* Privateers at Sea, the Marshal *d'Estrees*, who commanded in the Place, order'd me to put out to Sea again, and to cruise about *Bell-Isle*. I did so, but seeing no Prey, I return'd, after a short Stay, to *Brest*, where, who shou'd I find a Prisoner, but the *Ostender*, *Bart's* Kinsman, that help'd us to escape from *Plymouth*. He had been taken by M. *Franc* Captain of a Ship, as he was steering a Bark, of which certain Merchants were Owners. I found, that, upon

1692.



The Count's
good Office
to a Pri-
soner who
had help'd
him former-
ly to escape
from Ply-
mouth.

upon my Account, he was at first treated with all Manner of Civility ; but the Intendant, to whom he was deliver'd up, had not that Regard for him, but committed him to Prison. The poor Man had done me so much Service at *Plymouth*, that I cou'd not but use all my Interest to serve him. I waited on M. *d'Estrees*, and begg'd him to commit the Prisoner to my Care, adding, that I wou'd be answerable for him. The Marshal, having a Mind to oblige me, remov'd him from Gaol to my Custody.

He obtains
his Liberty.

As soon as the honest Man saw me, he fell about my Neck, and embrac'd me with Tears of Joy. I carry'd him aboard, and gave him good Chear ; And I wrote the same Day to M. *de Pontchartrain* to petition him for the Liberty of a Man to whom I was oblig'd for mine. That Minister was so good as to grant me even more than I ask'd ; for he not only restor'd my Pilot to his Liberty, but gave him Leave to redeem his Vessel for a Trifle ; but he did not lay hold of this last Favour, because, he said, neither the Ship nor Cargo were his, and that he did not know whether the Owners were willing to redeem them. As soon as he had his Liberty, and was going away, I made him a Present of Ten Lewid'ors, besides

besides the Four Hundred Crowns, 1692.
which I had taken Care to pay to his
Wife, after I came from *Plymouth*.

THE Wound which I had receiv'd in my Knee at the last Battle, was not yet cur'd, for the Salt-water hinder'd it from healing; and as the Campaign was also at an End, I desir'd Leave to lay up my Ship, and to retire for a while; which having obtain'd, I set out for *Provence*, whither I return'd with the pleasing Expectation, not only of seeing my Family again, but of settling some little Domestic Affairs, which cou'd not be done without my being on the Spot. At the Opening of the Campaign, I return'd to *Brest*, and went on board the *Pearl*. The King's Fleet, consisting of seventy-five Men of War under the Command of the Marshal de *Tourville*, sail'd for the Straits of *Gibraltar*, where the Count d'*Estrees*, with Twenty other Ships from *Provence*, was to join us. We anchor'd in the Road of *Lagos*, on the Coast of *Portugal*. I was commanded to go out for Intelligence, and to examine strictly what appear'd, so that if I perceiv'd a great Number of Ships, I shou'd make it my Business to find out whether they were Merchant Men, or Ships of Force belonging to the Enemy.

The Count obtains Leave to go home to settle his private Affairs.

Returns to *Brest*.

Is sent out for Intelligence.

1693.

THREE other Captains were detach'd with me upon the same Errand. We all set Sail, and in a few Days spy'd a Fleet consisting of above One hundred and fifty Sail of Merchant Ships, belonging to the Enemy. Being well assur'd that we were not mistaken, we made haste to join our Fleet, in order to make a Report to the Admiral of what we had discover'd, assuring him they were only Merchant Men, and not Ships of Force. Upon this News he tackled out, and sailing before the Wind; for what Reason I know not; he was got above ten Leagues out of the Way.

His Execution at Sea.

NEXT Day our whole Squadron discover'd the Fleet of Merchant Ships, which the General order'd to be chac'd, but the Enemy took the Advantage of the Wind which we lost the Night before by our Working, and made off, so that we did them but very little Harm. However we took two of their Men of War of sixty Guns, and burnt thirty of their Merchant Ships, which were run ashore on the Coast of Portugal. I burnt three of 'em myself, and took a fourth, which was all the Loss they suffer'd, and certainly 'twas happy for 'em that they 'scap'd so well; because, had it not been for the false Step I just now mention'd,

tion'd
have
AF
pafs'
diterro
& Estr
when
Fleet,
un-rig
failed
I had
Woun
the PH
Baths
vice to
perfec
I sh
at Tou
of the
ders to
Marin
TH
of tha
plaisan
n the
me, in
he wou
out at
Place
on his
WH
Bayonn
forbidd
Vor

1694.

tion'd, their whole Fleet cou'd hardly have miss'd being taken.

AFTER this Expedition the Fleet pass'd the *Straits*, and enter'd the *Mediterranean*, where we join'd the Count d'Estrees. But we parted a little after, when M. d'Estrees, with half of the Fleet, pass'd the *Straits*, and came to anchor at *Brest*, and M. de Tourville sail'd to *Tboulon*, where he did the like. I had follow'd M. de Tourville, but my Wound in my Knee not being cur'd, the Physicians advis'd me to go to the Baths at *Digne*, which were of such Service to me, that I return'd, as it were, perfectly cur'd.

He goes to the Baths for the Cure of his Wound.

And to *Toulon*.

And to *Bayonne*.

I SPENT the Remainder of the Year at *Toulon*, where, about the latter End of the Winter Season, I receiv'd Orders to go to *Bayonne* to command the Marines there.

THE Duke de Grammont, Governor of that Place, was exceeding complaisant; he would needs have me lodge in the Town, and, after having told me, in a very obliging Manner, that he wou'd not have me dine any where but at his House, he appointed me a Place at his Table, which was a Seat on his Left Hand.

WHEN I had my Orders to go to *Bayonne*, I receiv'd a private Instruction, forbidding me, for I know not what

1694. Reason, to obey the Duke. I kept this last Injunction very secret, but some Time after my Arrival, upon a Rumour that the Enemy intended to make a Descent at St. Jean de Luz, finding that Twenty-five or Thirty Officers that I had under me, to muster and command the Seamen upon the Coast, wou'd not have been able to have discharg'd their Duty, if there was a Misunderstanding betwixt the Governor and me, I went to him in his Study, and producing my Order from Court, which, as Things then stood, was directly contrary to his Majesty's Service, we agreed to behave for the present, as the Court wou'd have directed, if it had foreseen the then State of our Affairs.

HAVING come to this Determination, I put myself and all my Officers of the Marine, under the Duke's Orders. M. de Grammont, full of Zeal for his Sovereign, embrac'd me tenderly, and made me his Lieutenant-General upon the Coast, where we quickly rais'd a good Number of Seamen, and of the Militia, and erected a great many Batteries, which were to be commanded by the Officers that I had under me. But all these Preparations were needless, for, after we had long waited for the Enemy, nobody appear'd

appe
Land
more
turn'd
M

form
in cor
ceiv'd

I w
not b
love t
made

repres
it was
thou'd

The C
but I v
was sea

THE
n the
where

Batte
Employ

content
that I
ny's So

he Mea
on to
ships,

essel.
NOT
ny Elde
a Ship

appear'd, and all the Reports of a Landing being dispers'd, we had no more Business for all those People, and turn'd them off.

MEAN Time, I thought fit to inform the Court of the Step I had taken, in communicating the Orders I had receiv'd from thence to the Duke.

I WAS afraid that my Conduct wou'd not be approv'd; for the Ministers love to be obey'd literally, therefore I made the worst of our Situation, and represented of how great Importance it was to his Majesty's Service, that I shou'd deviate from my Instructions. The Court approv'd of my Conduct; but I was told, that what I had done was seasonable for this Time only.

THE next Campaign, that is to say in the Year 1695, I return'd to Toulon, where I was appointed Commander of a Battery of 25 Guns, which was an Employment that I was forc'd to be content with, there being not a better Port for Officers. For the Enemy's Squadron, which was gone into the Mediterranean, being in a Condition to hinder the Coming out of any Ships, the King did not fit out one Vessel.

NOR long after my Arrival, I lost my Eldest Brother, who was Captain of a Ship. His Death was a sensible

1695.
His Return
to Toulon.

The Death
of his Brother.

1695.

Affliction to me, for we always lov'd one another tenderly; but as great a Loss as it was, it was a Duty to be as easy as possible under it, as well as under so many other Incidents with which Life is chequer'd.

UPON certain Advice that the Enemy's Fleet was retir'd, I had a Commission to command a Ship called *The Marquis*. M. Pallas, Captain of a Ship, was associated with me, and we were order'd to protect Trade, and to give chase to the *Flushingers*, who had for some Time past ruin'd it. We had Orders first to convoy a Fleet of Merchant Ships into the *Levant*. As I was going off, I took on board the Bailiff of *St. Vian*, accompany'd with a Dozen Knights, that wanted to go to *Malta*. Pallas, to whom they apply'd first refus'd, out of meer Caprice, to take them in. When we came to *Malta*, put them ashore, and caus'd some Cannon to be fir'd to do them Honour. Pallas, vex'd that I had taken those Gentlemen on board, after he had rejected them, complained to me of it sadly; but was soon pacify'd, when he saw that I was going to give him a Share of the Refreshments which the Bailiff sent me in Acknowledgment of the Service which I had done him.

He sails to the *Levant*, and carries some Kts. to *Malta*.

1695.

FROM *Malta* we carry'd our Merchant Men to the Entrance of the *Archipelago*. When we came near *Cerigo*, we saw a Sail which seem'd to make towards us. As she was full before the Wind, *Pallas* and I were both of Opinion that we shou'd immediately make a Feint as if we fled; that when Night came, we wou'd endeavour to find the Ship out, and that the first that discover'd it shou'd let off a Cannon, and light up a Fire for a Signal.

I WAS more fortunate than my Companion; I found the Ship, and made the Signal we had agreed upon. As I was going to speak with her, she fir'd upon me. *Pallas*, who came at my Signal, was also approaching to speak with her; but she return'd no other Answer than a Broadside of Cannon, and a Discharge of small Arms, to which he made the like Return. During this, as I was going a little nearer, I receiv'd the same Treatment as *Pallas*, and return'd the same Answer. Thus we battled it for Two Hours without knowing with whom. 'Twas a very large Ship, carry'd a great Number of Guns, and made a very great Fire with small Arms; from all this, we concluded she might be a Man of War, however we were resolv'd to keep her in View

His Engage-
ment with a
great Dutch
Ship from
Smyrna.

1695.

all Night : she was a bad Sailor ; and as I was drawing cloſer to her, becauſe it was a very dark Night, and I was always afraid leſt ſhe ſhou'd eſcape, ſhe fir'd upon me, and I anſwer'd with my whole Broad-ſide, which made her quiet till Morning.

WHEN the Firing was over, the Time was ſpent on both Sides in reſtoring. As ſoon as the Day appear'd, we perceiv'd that we had been engag'd with a great Ship which had Three Decks, and carry'd Dutch Colours; upon which I ſaid to Pallas, Sir, I know the Dutch; if we ſpend our Time in Cannonading, we may fight till to Morrow, and be never the nearer. The only thing we can do, is to board her. As you are the chief Commander 'tis your Right to begin; but if you won't, I will. Pallas ſaid, that the Sea was too tumultuous, that it wou'd be too dangerous to board, and that if we only continued our Cannonading, the Ship, which was already very much damag'd, wou'd not hold out much longer. I ſubmitted to his Opinion, tho' I did not think it the beſt. - The Fight was renew'd, and laſted above two Hours, but the Victory ſtill remain'd doubtful.

WHILE we thus loſt Time in battering one another, the Centinel upon the

the
Leev
other
alfo
Cann
the I
to ſp
I
let n
only
but h
ſelf b
which
Linin
paſſ'd
my S
away
Being
Risks
myſel
order
board
Palla
I r
the E
witho
the S
Time
do no
ſeeing
to m
Ships
to b



the Watch spy'd four Ships to the Leeward, making toward us, and two others to the Windward, which were also advancing at the Report of the Cannon. Upon this *Pallas* quitted the Engagement, and made a Signal to speak with me.

I HAD been too much batter'd to let my Prize go so easily. I had not only lost near fourscore of my Men, but had like to have been kill'd myself by three Cannon Balls, the first of which carry'd off my Breeches Pocket, Lining and all; the second, which pass'd between my Legs, graz'd upon my Stocking, and the third carry'd away one of the Tyes of my Peruke. Being vex'd that I had run all these Risks to no purpose, I did not trouble myself much about the Signal, but order'd my Officers to prepare for boarding, saying, I wou'd speak with *Pallas* after the Ship was taken.

The Count's Danger.

I IMMEDIATELY bore down upon the Enemy and boarded him, but not without the Loss of more Men; for the Ship held out stoutly for some Time, but, at last, when she cou'd do no more, she surrendr'd. *Pallas* seeing that I had conquer'd her, came to me, and perceiving that the four Ships to the Leeward, which appear'd to be Men of War, were bearing

He takes the Ship.

1695.

down upon us with full fail, he was for burning this Prize for fear of being taken ourselves.

My Prize being immediately clear'd, and finding, by the Captains Report, that her Cargo was worth above two Millions, I made answer to *Pallas*, that I was not of his Opinion: That before we proceeded to such an Extremity, we ought, at least, to stay till we were attack'd: That I wou'd be answerable for the Consequence; and that, if there was a Necessity, we cou'd but burn her at last. I added that the King's Ships wou'd run no Risk; that they were good Sailors, and that we shou'd have Time enough to make our Escape, if the Case requir'd it.

PALLAS, not pleas'd with my Answer, return'd, and in a Moment after, sent me one of his Officers with Orders to burn the Ship immediately. I sent back the Officer, without scarce giving him a Hearing. *Go, Sir, said I, and tell M. Pallas that I disobey him in this Instance, because I am fully perswaded that 'tis for the King's Service.* -

DURING this Dispute, the Ships we had discover'd still made up toward us; the two Ships which came at the Report of the Cannon, advanc'd with

in half a League to the Windward of us, hoisted a white Flag, and fir'd a Gun. *Pallas* fir'd a Gun likewise, by way of Answer, and hoisted the Flag of *France*, upon which the two Ships steer'd off. I guess'd by their working that they were two small *Turkish* Corsairs, or Privateers of *Flushing*. The four other Ships, which were to the Windward, when they saw the King's Flag, after a Consultation, continued their Course.

PALLAS, who still persisted in it that they were *English*, for, to speak the Truth, they appear'd to be such by their Built, sent me a final Order to burn the Prize. I laugh'd heartily at the Message, and addressing myself to him that brought it; *M. Pallas*, said I, *banters both you and me; but return on board, and tell him, that Men of War don't spend Time in Parleying when the Business is to Fight. I own that those Ships appear by their Built to be English Men of War; but by their Working, I am persuaded that they are only Merchant Ships, that seek nothing but to make the best of their Way Home, and which, instead of coming towards us, will be very glad if we don't go to attack them. In fine, tell M. Pallas, that our Prize being shatter'd to Pieces, and without a Rudder, I wou'd have him*

1695. *come and bring his Carpenters to try to save her.*

AT last *Pallas*, submitting to my Reasons, came to me, when we refitted the Ship the best we cou'd, and tow'd her to the Isle of *Cephalonia*, where we left her: For it was not possible for us to carry her to *France* in that Condition, that is to say, without Masts and a Rudder. I left an Officer on board, with thirty Men, to take care of her.

THIS Ship, tho' she had three Decks, and tho' she carry'd Sixty-eight Guns, and Two hundred and sixty Men, Soldiers and Sailors, was but a Merchant Man. She was come from *Smyrna*, with a Cargo which had cost Fifty-six thousand Pieces of Eight, not reckoning the Contraband Goods which she had taken on board. She was bound to *Leghorn*, and from thence to *Amsterdam*.

His fair
Captive.

AMONG the Prisoners we took, was a young Woman, a Native of *Geneva*, about eighteen Years of Age, one of the prettiest Girls I had ever seen in my Life. She was so terrify'd, that she hid herself, insomuch that it was some time before we cou'd find her. When I saw her drown'd in Tears, her Beauty and her miserable Condition touch'd me to the Quick. I did
all

all I cou'd to raise her Spirits, promis'd her that she shou'd come to no Harm, sent for her Husband, and gave them a Room to themselves.

1695.

IMMEDIATELY several Sailors came and acquainted me, that this Woman had Pearls and precious Stones of an immense Value in her Head-dress, which were committed to her Care by some *Jews* that embark'd with her. They added, that I ought not to neglect this Hint, that there was a vast Booty to be taken, and that they wonder'd I had not already given Orders for the seizing it. At these Words, I said to them, with an angry Frown, *If she has any rich Jewels in her Head-dress, 'tis either her own good Fortune, or the good Fortune of those who trusted her with 'em. As for my part, I'd have ye to know, Rascals, that a Man of my Station can't be guilty of such forbidden Actions as you have the Rashness to propose.* When we arriv'd at *Cephalonia*, we put our Prisoners ashore, and the pretty Hugonot along with them.

He protects
her from
Plunder,
and sets her
ashore at
Cephalonia.

THE Country where we were, put me in mind of M. *Constance*: I had for a long Time forgot what he made me suffer at *Siam*, and his Misfortunes had so reconcil'd my Friendship to him, for I did not always hate him,

1695.

He finds
out a Bro-
ther of M.
Constance,
the Mini-
ster at *Siam*.

that after his Death, for which I was truly sorry, I was desirous of nothing so much, as to do a Pleasure to his Family.

I INQUIR'D about them, and was told that he had a Brother left at the Village of *Custode*. I went in quest of him the very Day after we arriv'd, and after having paid him a Compliment, I told him that there were very considerable Sums at *Paris* which M. *Constance* had sent thither by Father *Tachard*, when he return'd with M. *de Chaumont*.

I WAS very well inform'd of this Article: For I had it from M. *Constance* himself, when we were very good Friends; which is a plain Proof of what I have already advanc'd elsewhere, that this Minister had no other View by settling the *French* at *Bancock*, than to obtain the Protection of *France*, to which Kingdom he even propos'd to retire, if ever the Situation of his Affairs shou'd oblige him to it.

HIS Brother was perswaded, by what I had said to him, to go to *France*. I took him aboard, and paid him all the Civilities imaginable. He went to *Paris*, and retir'd from thence with very great Sums; but, as if it had been destin'd that I shou'd never meet with any thing but Ingratitude from

He is
doom'd to
meet with
ingratitude
from that
Family.

1695.

from that Family, he set out for his own Country, not only without returning me Thanks, but even without doing me the Honour of a Visit.

WE sail'd from *Cephalonia* to *Malta*, where twenty Merchant Ships stay'd to put themselves under our Convoy. I there took on board my Ship the Bailiff *de la Vieuville*, and with him Twenty-six Knights that wanted Passage. When we were within fifteen Leagues of *Malta*, two Privateers of *Flushing* made up towards the Fleet, to which we gave Chace, and I took one of them. The Crews strip'd all the Prisoners according to Custom; at which Time the Bailiff, a Man of uncommon Goodness, in order to give an Example of Charity to all those young Knights in his Retinue, made a Collection, to which he gave a great deal out of his own Pocket, and with the Money cloath'd all those poor Prisoners.

He sails
from *Cepha-*
lonia to
Malta.

Takes a
Privateer.

As we continued our Course off of the Cape of *Apulia*, I gave Chace for a long Time to a Ship which I thought at first was a Corsair; but when I came within a nearer View she appear'd to be a *Venetian* that I had seen at *Cephalonia*. I imagin'd that she was freighted for the *English*, and therefore resolv'd to oblige her to take on

1695. on board the *Flushing* Prisoners, whom I had lately taken into my Ship, and which I found were a great Incumbrance to me; for they were above One hundred and twenty in Number, and tho' I was not sure whether the Cargo of the *Venetian* really belong'd to the *English*, I thought my Doubt of it was sufficient Warrant for me, if not to attack and to make Prize of her, at least to demand the Service of her which I propos'd.

I THEREFORE declar'd to her, that if she did not prepare to receive on board a certain Number of *Flushing* Prisoners that I had, she must make ready for an Engagement; but her fear of being taken and carry'd to *France*, made her comply with whatever I desir'd.

BESIDES the Hundred and twenty *Flushingers*, that I wanted to be rid of, I had also thirty *Dutch* Seamen on board, belonging to the great Prize, whom I reserv'd to myself, to reinforce my Crew: For, as I said before, I lost fourscore Men in the Engagement, and had left thirty at *Cephalaria*, to guard the Ship which I had taken.

BUT I had no longer any need of those thirty *Dutch* Sailors, I wanted also

also to
them

WH
they a
me to
disting
whom
they
the
with
charm
them,

W
was
had
wou'd
ber'd
so th
out
Matt
lande
why
wife
my
and
to c

A
had
Pinn
take
we
orde
lige

also to get rid of them, and to put them on board the *Venetian Ship*. 1695.

WHEN they knew my Resolution, they all fell at my Feet, and desiring me to keep them with me, and to distinguish them from the *Flushingers*, whom they call'd Robbers and Pyrates, they seem'd to be so melancholy at the Thoughts of being confounded with People of that sort, that, being charm'd with their Probity, I detain'd them, and carry'd 'em to *Toulon*.

WHEN I overtook *Pallas* again, I was very far from telling him that I had got rid of the *Flushingers*, for he wou'd not have fail'd to have incumber'd me also with half of his Men, so that we continued our Course without my speaking one Word of the Matter. When we were at *Toulon* he landed his Prisoners, and ask'd me why I did not put mine ashore likewise; I then told him how I had rid my Hands of mine, at which he smil'd, and own'd that I was not in the wrong to conceal it from him.

AT our Arrival at *Toulon*, *Pallas* had Orders to fit out a couple of Pinnaces, and to return to *Cephalonia* to take the Cargo out of the Prize which we had left there. As for me I was order'd immediately to *Algier*, to oblige those Corsairs to keep the Peace:

For

1696.

His Arrival at *Toulon*.

He is order'd for *Algier*.

1696. For since the Engagements they had enter'd into with Admiral *Ruffel*, they had done some things which gave occasion of Complaint.

His Complaint of ill Usage on that score.

I HAD refitted, and was preparing to Sail, when I had Orders to resign my Ship to the *Chevalier du Pale*, and to carry *M. de Ferriol*, the King's Ambassador to the *Porte*. This Order mortify'd me exceedingly: For thus to take away my Ship, and to give me a Commission that wou'd turn to no account, was, in a proper Sense, leaving me to shift for myself. Being vex'd to see myself so ill us'd, especially after a Campaign, in which I had succeeded with Honour, and to the King's Advantage; I complain'd to the Minister, and told him, that I did not expect such Treatment for my good Service.

BESIDES this Letter, I wrote another to *Bontems*, wherein I told him how sensible I was of the Affront put upon me, of the Injustice with which I was treated, and of the Scandal which it reflected on me, it being a thing never known in the Sea Service, to degrade a Captain unless he had fail'd in his Duty. *Bontems*, who was never idle when he had an Opportunity to do me a Pleasure, acquainted His Majesty of the Wrong that had been

1696.

been done me, at which the King was surpriz'd, and resolv'd to ask the Minister his Reasons for such Usage of me.

INDEED, the Minister was altogether ignorant of this Alteration in the Navy-Office, because it was the Commissioners own Act and Deed; but lest it shou'd be understood that he neglected those Particulars, which it concern'd him to attend to, he made Answer, without the least Confusion in Appearance, that, as he had nothing to object against my Conduct, he had not depriv'd me of my Ship to mortify me; and that, so far was he from any Intention to make me uneasy, that he had appointed me for the Command of two Ships.

HAVING thus extricated himself out of this Perplexity, the Voyage to *Constantinople* was out of the Question. I had Orders to fit out two Ships to cruise in the *Mediterranean*, to protect the Trade, and to give Chase to the Enemy's Privateers. I mann'd them, but with much ado, because all the Sailors had already been taken up for the general Armament. Nevertheless, I made up my Compliment; and notwithstanding a thousand little Incidents which somewhat retarded me, I was quickly in a Condition to put to Sea. My two Ships

1696.

Ships carry'd each fifty Guns. The second had the Count *de Hautefort* on board. My particular Instruction from the Minister was, to lie at Anchor before *Algier*, in order to engage those Barbarians to keep the Peace. From *Algier* I had Orders to repair to *Cephalaria*, to convoy the Prize, and the two Pinnaces that accompany'd it.

He takes a
good *English*
Prize.

In my Course, almost parallel with *Majorea*, I took a very considerable *English* Prize, which I sent to *Toulon*; and, according to my Orders, I made my Appearance before *Algier*, from whence several poor Christian Slaves came aboard of me in the Night-time for Refuge. When they arriv'd, they look'd more like dead Men, than any thing else; for as I was pretty far out in the Road, they were forc'd to swim a great Way.

His Arrival
before *Algier*.

Of the many Fellow-sufferers that try'd to follow them, some were drown'd, and others cry'd out for Help, in such a Manner, as cou'd not but raise Pity.

His Stratagem to
take on
board some
of the Christian
Captives.

I cou'd not tell what to do to save them, because it was expressly prohibited by several Treaties of Peace with the *Algerines*, to put out any Long-Boats to favour the Escape of their Slaves. However, I was not willing to let these perish; and therefore, in order

to

1696.

to give them Assistance without any apparent Contravention of the Treaties, I caus'd four hundred Fathom of Ropes to be put into my Ship's Boat ; and order'd the Master to let out the Cordage at such Places where he heard any Cry ; and in case he was discover'd by the *Turkish* small Craft, which was likely enough, those Barbarians being always on the Watch, and cruising in the Road to hinder the Slaves from escaping ; I bad him to put the Oars into the Ship Boat, and to hale himself along by the Cable which he had, while I did the like on board.

It happen'd as I foresaw it wou'd. The *Turks* small Craft spy'd the Ship-Boat, and gave it chase. The Master of it, who had already taken several of the poor Wretches on board, finding he was discover'd, work'd the Boat in the manner that I had order'd him, and hal'd himself aboard the Ship, to which he was pull'd by main Force. The Ship Boat was so nimble, that the *Turks*, with all the Speed they cou'd make, were not able to overtake it ; however, they follow'd it aboard, and wonder'd how 'twas possible, that a Vessel that was not navigated, cou'd go faster than theirs.

THEY complain'd to me, that my Long Boat had carry'd off several of their

The *Turks* Complaint of it, and his Answer.

1696.

their Slaves, contrary to Treaties. I told them they were mistaken, that my Long Boat was aboard all the while ; which tho' it was very easy to prove, they did not change their Note, but still insisted on it, that they had seen the Boat at Sea ; by the same Token, *said they*, that it flew like the very Wind, tho' it was not navigated. Then turning it off with a Banter, Surely, *said I*, 'twas some great Fish that you saw, for you know as well as I, that a Boat can't make any Way without an Oar. This put an End to the Discourse for that Time, and the *Turks* turn'd their Boats to Shore.

An Instance
of what a
Man will
do for Li-
berty.

AT Day-break the Watch discover'd a Slave swimming to us, about a League from the Ship. I immediately order'd out the Long Boat to go to his Relief. He found him quite out of Breath, for he had swam above ten Leagues ; so great an Ascendant has the Love of Liberty over the Minds of Men, and so apt is it to put them upon attempting Things that are extraordinary. No doubt but this poor Christian wou'd have sunk in the Effort, had it not been for a Piece of Cork under his Breast, and some Gourds under his Armpits. Mean time, there were great Complaints against me at *Algier* ; several of the principal Men held a tumultuous Assembly

1696.

Assembly at the *French* Consul's House ; who, to satisfy them in some Measure, sent the Drogman, or Interpreter to me with some of that Assembly, who came on board to reclaim their Slaves.

WHEN they demanded their Slaves, I told 'em, in short, that I had none to restore ; and that if I had, they ought not to expect I wou'd give them up ; that they knew that the King's Ships, where-ever they came, were such sacred Sanctuaries, that those even of the *Turks*, who were Slaves among the Christians, recover'd their Liberty, when they were happy enough to come aboard 'em ; that for my own Part, they knew very well, that for fear of giving Uneasiness, I had not been ashore, and that I had even avoided going any farther into the Road ; that moreover, since they were so much concern'd for the Loss they had sustain'd ; it was their Business to have prevented it, by taking care, because they knew very well, that nothing in the World is more natural to a Man, than the Love of Liberty, and that he is always ready to encounter any Danger for recovering it. Tho' they had much ado to swallow these Arguments, yet they were forc'd to pass it by. One of the *Turks* that came aboard, ask'd me, if one of his Slaves, who was wanting,

The *Turks*
Demand of
their Slaves

The Count's
Expostulation
with
them on
that Head.

was

1696.

was not among those that took Refuge with me: I made him answer, that I cou'd not give him any Light upon that Head, and that I knew nothing of what he ask'd me.

He reply'd to me in his Gibberish, *You answer me like a Sickle; speak directly to me, and tell me whether my Slave is aboard thy Ship?* If he be there, I am not sorry for it, 'tis his good Fortune; but tell me if you know him, I will not seek him any more? I protested to him, that I knew nothing of the Matter; that indeed, I had heard Men calling round the Ship for Help; but that not daring to send out my Long Boat, for fear of contravening the Prohibitions, they might be drown'd, or might be return'd ashore. This Turk seem'd to be pleas'd with my Answer, and went his way.

I SET sail next Day, and steer'd for *Cephalonia*. We were about the Middle of the Channel, between the Isles of *Majorca* and *Sardinia*, when we discover'd a little Smack-sail, which was not far from us. We gave her Chase, and when we came up with her, found she was a little *Algerine* Corfair, with but thirteen Men on board, which had been drove by Stress of Weather from the Coasts of *Catalonia*.

I took the Master aboard, and examin'd his Pass, and ask'd him whither he

he

he w
Why
you p
how t
answ
bary
Christ
ed to
I
mis'd
Barb
said
your
You
ply'd
take
Simp
an u
wou
if I
T
Ulce
filly
cou'
fore,
God
rais'
all h
ly'd
conf
whic
trust

1696.

He takes a
little *Alge-
rine* Cor-
fair.

he was bound. *I don't know*, said he, *Why do you ask?* I made answer, *Do you pretend to go to Sea, and don't know how to sail?* The Corfair made me answer, that he knew the Coast of *Barbary* was the South, and the Land of the Christians the North; and, that he needed to know nothing more.

I row'd this little Vessel, and promis'd the Master to carry him to the *Barbary* Shore. *With all my Heart*, said he; *but first of all, I have a Favour to beg of you. What is it?* said I. *You can easily grant me my Request*, reply'd he. *Help me, for God's sake, to take the Christians.* I laugh'd at his Simplicity, and told him, that it was an unreasonable Request, because he wou'd not help me to take the *Turks*, if I desir'd him never so much.

His Confe-
rence with
the Master,
who desir'd
him to assist
him in ta-
king the
Christians.

THIS poor Wretch had above ten Ulcers upon his Body. He was so silly as to imagine, that my Surgeon cou'd cure him instantly; and therefore, he desir'd me, for the Love of God, to let him do it. His Stupidity rais'd my Compassion. When he and all his Crew had eat heartily, they parly'd some time among themselves, and consulted what they shou'd do: After which, having, no doubt, some Mistrust of me, they desir'd Leave to be gone,

1696.

gone, which I granted them with Pleasure.

THE *Algerines* have such an Itch for Pilfering, that when they were got aboard their little Vessel, they wou'd fain have stole the little Cable by which their Vessel was moor'd to our Ship, but 'twas not in their Power. The Wind was very high, and the Sea so swell'd, that they soon repented that they did not embrace the Assistance I offer'd them, and desir'd to come on board again; but I was resolv'd to have no more to do with 'em; and making all the Sail we cou'd, we soon lost Sight of 'em.

IN the Night-time, a very black Cloud was form'd on a sudden, which was accompany'd with terrible Thunder and Lightning. For fear of a great Storm, I caus'd all the Sails to be furl'd. There were above thirty *St. Elmos* (the Meteors we call *Will with a Wisp*) about the Ship, and one in particular on the Top of the Fane of the Mainmast, which was a Foot and a half in height. I sent up a Sailor to fetch it down. When the Fellow was got up to it, he said, that it made a Noise like the Hiss of Gunpowder that is fir'd when 'tis wet. I order'd him to take off the Fane, and to come down; but as soon as he had taken it off, the Fire quitted it, and

The Meteors call'd
St. Elmos.

pitch'd

pitch'd
where
Degr
much
but a
Hour
Weat
W
quir'd
been
Cour
Days
I found
king h
off of
Latitu
cause
trade
their
W
ria,
one of
of eig
and ga
law th
taken,
thor B
Kingd
them a
nit, H
o can
leavou
poultry
VOL

1696.

pitch'd upon the Top of the Mast, where it stay'd a long while, till by Degrees it spent it self. Tho' we so much dreaded a Storm, we had nothing but a heavy Shower of Rain for some Hours, which was succeeded by fair Weather.

The Count's Voyage to Cephalonia and the Fare of Messina.

WHEN I came before *Malta*, I inquir'd about *M. Pallas*, but he had not been seen there; so that I continu'd my Course, and arriv'd at *Cephalonia*, three Days after he had been gone. When I found there was no Hopes of overtaking him, I was resoly'd to go and cruise off of the Fare of *Messina*. I chose that Latitude rather than any other, because the Enemy's Merchant-Ships that trade from the *Levant* to *Leghorn*, steer their Course that Way.

He forces two Privateers of *Majorca* to run themselves ashore.

WHEN I was upon the Coast of *Calabria*, I spy'd two Privateers of *Majorca*, one of twenty-four Guns, and the other of eight. I hoisted *English* Colours, and gave them Chace. They presently saw that they cou'd not avoid being taken, and therefore went and cast Anchor before the Town of *Rochel*, in the Kingdom of *Naples*. I went as near to them as the depth of Water wou'd permit, hoisted *French* Colours, and began to cannonade them. The Town endeavour'd to defend them with some faulty Pieces of Cannon; but I made

1696.

He takes a Monk aboard, and sends him as his Ambassador to the Shore.

such a Fire upon the Privateers, that not being able to hold out, they were oblig'd to run their Ships ashore, and then to abandon them, by which Means the Crews escap'd. They had not gone far, when eight *Turks* of *Tripoli*, whom the *Majorcans* had taken out of a *French* Bark, and left on board, hoisted the white Flag. The Long Boat and Ship Boat were sent aboard 'em, and took both the Ships; in which, except the *Turks*, they found none but dead and wounded Men, and a Monk clad in white.

DURING this, the Inhabitants of the Place, who were Friends to the *Majorcans*, came in a Body to the Port, with Arms. The Sight of 'em gave me some Uneasiness; I was resolv'd, indeed, to keep my Prizes at all Events, but after I had made myself Master of 'em, I did not care for another Battle; and as the Case stood, I thought I cou'd do nothing better, than to send somebody ashore with Proposals of Peace.

FOR this Embassy, I chose the Monk and bid him tell the Inhabitants from me, that I had no Design upon them, that all I meant, was to keep the two Ships that I had taken; that it was strange they shou'd take Arms to defend the *Corfsairs*, which far from meriting

their only if the shou that and disch tion, ded; Nigh order

N the M steering wards this S her C lours. Mean Colou the lea concu cou'd when ly at ever, me w who I I mac small Engli Boat they

1696.

Threatens
to bombard
the Town
for protect-
ing the Pri-
vateers.

their Protection, ought to be consider'd only as publick Robbers; that in short, if they resolv'd to protect them, I shou'd be so far from yielding them up, that I must be oblig'd to bombard and cannonade the Town. The Monk discharg'd his Commission to Admiration, and a sort of Truce was concluded; during which, we work'd all Night in unlading the two Ships, in order to run them ashore.

He decoys
an English
Bark by
false Co-
lours.

NEXT Day, about ten o' Clock in the Morning, a Bark came in Sight, steering, as it were, from *Messina*, towards this Town. My Desire to take this Ship, without being oblig'd to give her Chase, made me hoist *English* Colours. The Bark, which was by this Means easily decoy'd, put up *Spanish* Colours, and came towards us without the least Mistrust. Indeed, every thing concurr'd to deceive her. For, how cou'd she take me for a *Frenchman*, when she saw two Ships lying so quietly at Anchor before the Town? However, she sent her Long Boat on board me with twenty-five Men, to know who I was. When I saw it approach, I made ready for a good Discharge of small Arms, and put on a Cap after the *English* Fashion. As soon as the Long Boat came near enough to be heard, they call'd out, *What News? Good*

Q 3

News.

1696.



Blows her
up.

News, said I; *Come aboard*. The Boat advanc'd without the least Suspicion, and became an easy Prey.

THE Bark, which was in full Sight, perceiving the Snare, tack'd about in order to get off; which was no less than I expected, and therefore I fir'd at her, and one of the Cannon-Bullets falling, as ill Luck wou'd have it, into the Gun-Room, set Fire to the Powder, and blew her up. It was really a lamentable Sight to see all the Crew trembling in the Air, and falling down in a Moment half burnt, with the Splinters of the Vessel, covering the Sea as it were, with dead Bodies, and the Wrecks of the Ship.

I was not so happy as to have either the Long Boat or Ship Boat aboard, they being both employ'd in the Guard of the two Privateers that were run ashore; but I immediately fitted out the Long Boat which I had just taken, sent it to the very Place where the Bark blew up, and was so fortunate as to save seven Men that were half burnt, among whom was a *Frenchman*.

THIS Vessel came from *Naples*, was fitted out for a Cruising Voyage, and carry'd One hundred and thirty Men. When my two *Majorcans* were set afloat again, I caus'd a little Merchant Vessel to be burnt, that I had taken in the Road,

Road
whit
with

I
to f
as th
I res
Corse
some
shou
my's
there
much
ward
Cape
I ga
Wor
left
as to
Way
the
mak
with
othe
lade
T
Men
will
the
I de
the
He

Road, set Sail, and return'd to *Malta*, whither I heard that *Pallas* was gone with his Convoy.

1696.

The Count
returns to
Malta, in
quest of *Pal-
las*.

I HAD not been at Sea long enough to spend all my Provisions ; besides, as the Season was not too far advanc'd, I resolv'd to go a Cruising off of Cape *Corse*, imagining I shou'd meet with some Prize there, or at least that I shou'd clear those Parts of the Enemy's Privateers. After having stay'd there some time, without perceiving so much as a single Bark, I proceeded towards the *Barbary* Shore, and off of Cape *Bon*, I spy'd three Ships, to which I gave Chase. I soon found by their Working, that they were *French* ; and lest they shou'd be so far intimidated as to run ashore, which was the only Way they had to escape, I gave over the Chase, and sent my Ship Boat to make them easy. They came to me with Joy, and said, there were nine other *French* Ships behind them richly laden.

THESE are very dangerous Seas for Merchant-Ships, and therefore I was willing to protect them from Insult in the best manner I cou'd. For this End I detach'd the Count *de Hautefort*, with the two *Majorcans* that I had taken. He met with them, and the whole

Q 4

Fleet

1696. Fleet joining me very soon, I put them under my Convoy, and we went and cast Anchor before *Beserti*, where I gave to all of them Signals.

He sets his
Turkish Pri-
soners at
Liberty.

BEFORE we sail'd, I sent for the *Turks* whom I had taken on board the *Corfairs* of *Majorca*, and told them, that tho' they had been taken out of an *Enemy's Ship*, yet, as we were at Peace with the Kingdom of *Tripoli*, and as they themselves had assur'd me they had been taken by the *Majorcans* out of a *French Ship*, I wou'd go, if they pleas'd, and put them ashore in a Country where they wou'd recover both their Liberty and the Exercise of their Religion. My View in it was to let them see that the *French* were Men of Integrity, exact Observers of Treaties, and grateful to their Friends, where-ever they met with 'em.

THESE eight *Turks* were so sensibly affected with the Favour I offer'd them, that they fell at my Feet, kiss'd them several times, and, in their Jargon, wish'd me a thousand Blessings. I carry'd them myself to the *Aga*, gave them each a Piece of Eight, and then deliver'd them up to that Officer, in Presence of all his Soldiers; who, charm'd at the Generosity of the *French*, seem'd infinitely pleas'd with their Punctuality

Punctuality in the Observation of Treaties.

1696.

THESE poor *Turks*, who were half naked, were cloath'd next Day by the Charity of their Countrymen. As for my own Part, I was glad, as I have said, of an Opportunity of giving those Barbarians at the same time, a good Opinion of our Nation, and of saving the Court the Expence which they must have been at to have sent those Prisoners to their own Country, which wou'd have been the Case unavoidably, considering that they had not been taken from the *Majorcan* Privateers, if they had not been taken before on board a *French* Bark. My Conduct was so very pleasing to the Minister, that he made me sensible of his Satisfaction.

FROM *Beserti* I proceeded with my Convoy to *Marseilles*, where we happily landed. The Arrival of the Fleet, which had above ten Millions on board, was so great a Pleasure to the Merchants, that in Acknowledgment of the Service I had done them, the Chamber of Commerce consulted to make me a Present of Two thousand Livres, which I only accepted as a Compliment, after I had obtain'd the Minister's Leave.

He arrives with a rich Fleet of Merchant Ships at *Marseilles*.

His Present from the Merchant.

THO^s

1696.

The Court's
Satisfacti-
on with the
Count's
Conduct.

THO' the Baths of *Digne*, as I have already said, had heal'd the Wound I receiv'd at the Fight of *La Hogue*, yet a Pain remain'd in my Leg, which at times prov'd very troublesome. I desir'd Leave of the Court to stay ashore some time for my Cure. *M. de Pontchartrain* return'd me a very obliging Answer, and granted my Request, on Condition, that when I was in a Capacity to serve, I wou'd give him Notice of it.

THE following is a Letter I receiv'd from *M. de Phelipeaux*, upon the same Subject, a little after the Answer I had from *M. de Pontchartrain*.

S I R,

M*Y* Father must have told you how well the King is satisfy'd with your Conduct, and the Zeal you have discover'd for his Service. I am very sorry for your Indisposition. I wish that it does not binder your Return to Sea. In the mean Time you must be careful not to take too much upon you.

Sign'd,

PHELIPEAUX.

WHEN

1696.

WHEN I was cur'd of my Indisposition, I sent Notice of it to the Minister, who gave me the Command of a Ship call'd the *Happy Return*. Not long after this, I had Orders to attend the Count d' *Estrees*, who was to Command the Naval Army design'd for the Siege of *Barcelona*, of which the Duke de *Vendome* had the Direction. This Siege, which was remarkable both for the Vigor of our Attack, and for the furious Sallies which the Enemy made upon us, was very tedious, which oblig'd M. de *Vendome* to send for the Gunners out of our Ships, and for the Officers to command them; and soon after he caus'd all the Soldiers to come ashore, of whom he form'd a Battalion, which mounted the Trenches in their turn as well as the Land Forces.

He has the Command of another Ship. Is order'd to the Siege of *Barcelona*.

1697.

I REPAIR'D immediately to the Count de *Luc*, who commanded one of the Battallions of the Galleys. One Morning, the Bailiff de *Noailles*, who was to command the Trenches in Quality of Lieutenant General, had caus'd a great Breakfast to be prepar'd for the Officers. We were actually at Table under the Shelter of the Capuchins Convent, when a Bomb from the Town fell within fifteen Paces from the

His Unconcernedness at the fall of a Bomb.

1697.

the Place where we were Eating, and in a Moment every Man fell flat on their Bellies to the Ground, till the Shell had burst. I was going to do the same, but observing that it fell upon soft Ground, into which it sunk, I found there was no Danger, took my Place again very calmly at Table without their perceiving it, and eat on, as if nothing had happened. When all the Gentlemen rose up again, they wonder'd to see that I had not chang'd my Situation, upon which I banter'd them for their fruitless Precaution, and the Entertainment concluded with merry Jest's upon that Article.

The City
capitulates.

MEAN Time the City was so hard press'd, that it surrender'd at length upon very honourable Terms, of which I shall not relate the Particulars, because 'tis foreign to my Subject. The Marines were put on board again soon after, and I was sent out to get Intelligence.

The Count
issent forth
upon the
Scout.

He meets a
Ship-load
of *Minim*
Fryars.

NOT far from the Coasts of *Catalonia* I met with a *Spanish* Ship laden with *Minim* Fryars, who, to the Number of near Three Hundred, were just come from a Town in *Spain*, where they had been to chuse their General. Tho' they had Passes, I carry'd them to M. d'Estrees, who said to me with a Smile,

What

What the Devil would you have me do with all these Minims? we shan't have Oil enough in the Army to keep them for Two Days. Upon this he order'd me to send them away with all Speed, saying they wou'd be a delicate Prize for the Algerines.

1697.

THE Fleet coming not long after to *Toulon* to unrig, the Marshal *d'Estrees* made me go on board a Ship call'd, *The Trident*, with Orders to sail to *Genoa* and *Leghorn*, to take the Merchant Ships, which I found there, under my Convoy, and carry them to *France*. I was but eight Days in my Voyage. That I might lose no Time, I stay'd under sail before *Genoa*, and sent my Ship-Boat thither with a Letter for the *French* Consul, to know if there was any thing to be done there for the King's Service; but he sent me word, that there was nothing to do for the present.

He sails to
Genoa.

FROM *Genoa* I steer'd my Course for *Toulon*, where I receiv'd an Order from the King to go on board another Ship, call'd the *Serious*, which was the finest Sailor in the whole Navy. M. *d'Estrees*, who gave me this Order, had receiv'd another, at the same Time, for arming the *Vigilant*, and to put the *Sieur Bidau* on board, who was Captain of a Ship.

And to
Toulon.

As

1697.

As *Bidou* was my Senior, and his Ship not so considerable as that to which I was order'd, he left no Stone unturn'd to have another Ship. He seem'd to take such Umbrage at it, that when he despair'd of carrying his Point by his own Interest, he work'd underhand, by the Interest of Women, who manag'd so artfully, that they made the Count *d'Estrees* his Friend.

This Nobleman wou'd fain have oblig'd me, more than once, to give my Consent to an Exchange; and at last, after several Arguments *Pro* and *Con*, which did not promote our Agreement, the Court being desirous to satisfy *M. d'Estrees*, made the Alteration themselves, which I all along refus'd, and likewise gave me the *Trident*, with Orders to Convoy some Merchant Ships as far as *Cape Bon*, and then to go before *Barcelona*, to receive the Orders of *M. de Vendôme*.

I set out accordingly, and at my Arrival before *Barcelona*, found Orders from Court, which, by virtue of the general Peace, forbade me to stop any of the Enemy's Ships. I was also order'd to sail to *Sardinia*, to notify the Peace to the Viceroy, and to stay in those Parts to drive away the Enemy's Privateers. In pursuance of this Order I sail'd to *Cagliari*, where two Major

To *Sardinia* to notify the general Peace.

can Privateers unrigg'd after the News I brought them of the Peace.

1697.

NOT far from hence, as I was almost over against the Island of St. Peter, Thunder broke upon our Ship, about four o'Clock in the Morning, with so terrible a Clap, that it made the very Poultry, and the Sheep, cry out. When it was Day we found one of our Sailors stone dead upon the Prow of the Ship, with his Eyes quite open, and his Body in such a natural Attitude, that he seem'd as if alive. After having search'd him, and found not the least Contusion upon his Body, I caus'd him to be open'd, and no part of his Entrails seem'd to be out of order, so that undoubtedly he was stifled on the Spot by the Lightning.

A Man kill'd on board his Ship by Lightning.

WHILE we continued in these Parts, I shot a great Fish, which the Fishermen call *Monge*, it weigh'd above four-score hundred, and my Servants melted the Fat of it, out of which they extracted two Barrels of Oil, which they sold at *Toulon* for fifty Livres.

The Count shoots a great Fish.

SOME Days after this, while we were at Anchor with other *French* Ships, in the Gulph of *Palmos*, still upon the Coast of *Sardinia*, one of the Captains, whose Name was *Richard*, going in his Ship-boat with a Sail, to take up some Nets that he had laid, the Boat over-

A Captain like to be drown'd by the overturning of his Boat.

turn'd,

1697.

turn'd, upon which I immediately sent out mine to help him, so that nobody was drown'd; but the Captain was so terrify'd, that he had much ado to come to himself. I stay'd in these Parts till M. de Franc, a Captain of a Ship, brought me Orders to come and lay up my Ship at *Toulon*, where I arriv'd in a few Days, and went Home to take some Refreshment.

The Count's
Return
home to
Toulon.

End of the FIRST VOLUME.



nt
ly
fo
ne
ill
p,
up
in
ke
to
to
ns
ty
si
in
2
2
I
m
of
dt
re
of
te
b
O
w
2
4
m